

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/



HARVARD DEPOSITORY
SPECIAL COLLECTION
CIRCULATION RESTRICTED

816.9 Tamil 1845 608.1 816.9 Tamil 1845 Cop. 1

יהוה



ABRIDGMENT

01

RHENIUS' TAMIL GRAMMAR.

SECOND EDITION.

WITH ADDITIONS AND IMPROVEMENTS.

MADRAS:

AMERICAN MISSION PRESS.

TO BE HAD AT THE PRESS, ALSO OF E. S. MINOR, JAPPNA,
AND OF REV. H. CHERRY, MADURA

1845.

Price One Rupee. Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

THIS little work is intended especially for Schools. The first edition of the Abridgment, though hastily prepared and badly printed, having been found useful, it was thought worth a careful revision, and considerable enlargement. Though still an Abridgment of the larger valuable Grammar of the Rev. C. T. E. Rhenius—which is frequently referred to, and will therefore be also needed by the thorough studentit will be found to contain no little original matter; especially a careful analysis of the verbal nouns, a chapter nearly new on Aussisons, some rules substituted for those in the larger Grammar, and others revised, and, it is thought, improved. The object has been to make loose statements precise, obscure rules perspicuous, and to add needed explanations and rules.

It was at first intended, at the suggestion of some engaged in the education of youth, to have all the leading rules of the Syntax arranged and numbered after the manner of European Grammars;

ral of them were thus arranged and printed: but it was found that a great part of the Syntax must in this case be re-cast to give them a proper shape, which would be inconsistent with the design of an Abridgment. This is offered as an apology to those who may be expecting to see the work more simplified to young learners, than it can be in its present form.

As it is, there can be no reason to doubt that, at a price rendering it accessible to children and youth in the Schools, as well as to more advanced students—who may find it a valuable adjunct even to the larger Grammar, which they will of course not be without—this little manual will prove highly convenient and useful to those, understanding English, who would learn or teach Tamil grammatically.

That it may thus aid in the study of the language, as the medium for conveying most important truth, and especially the knowledge of salvation, to multitudes now wandering in the darkness of Heathenism, and of leading them to the "light of life," is the earnest wish and prayer of the

PUBLISHERS.

ERRATA.

Page 96. The last sentence on the page should be இப்பொழுதுகலக்கமுடையவனுரிருக்கீறேன்.

Page 105. The paragraph near the middle of the page should be as follows:

If there be more than one adverb, உம் must be added to each, either before or after ஆய், thus: வானம் உயரமுள்ளதுமாய் மக்மையுடையதுமாயிருக்கின்றது, or வானம் உயரமுள்ளதாயும்மக்மையுடையதாயுமீருக்கின் றது, the heaven is high and glorious.

NOTE.

In the first 36 pages the soft r is designated by π instead of σ , and in the composition of vowel-consonants a new sign (n) is used for the usual sign (π), thus: πn , $r\bar{\alpha}$, Gun, $p\bar{\delta}$, instead of $\sigma \pi$, and $Gu\pi$. Throughout the rest of the grammar the latter forms only are used. After these pages had been struck off, several other letters of the same fount were improved, as \mathfrak{A}_1 , \mathfrak{A}_2 , \mathfrak{A}_3 , \mathfrak{A}_5 , \mathfrak{A}_5 .

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

ŧ											PAG	· .
١.	General Statemen	t,	-		-		-		-			1
2. '	The Tamil Letter	ı, -		-		-		-		-		1
3.	Division of Letter	18,	-		•		-					2
4.	Names of	do		-		-		-		-		4
5.	Transmutation of	do.	-		-		-		-			4
6.	Omission of	do		-		-		-		-		6
7.	Augmentation of	do.	-		-		-		-			7
	Directions in rega		rtai	in w	ords	, -	•	•	•	-		9
	Directions in rega						-		-			10
		CHA	PTI	er i	ı.							
10.	Parts of Speech,			-		-					- `	11
	The Particles,	-	-		-			-		-		11
	Division and Sub	division	of	No	uns,		-		-		•	15
	Cases of Nouns,					-		•		-		16
14.	The Oblique Cas	e, -			,				-		•	20
15.	Pronouns, -	-		•		,		-		-		21
16.	Pronouns of the	First P	ers	on,	-		•		-		-	21
17.	Pronouns of the	Second	Pe	780 PA	,	•		-		-		23
18.	Pronouns of the	Third	Pen	ion,	•		-		-		•	24
19.	Interrogative Pro	nouns,		•		•		•		•		28
20.	Nouns of Number	er,	-		-		-		-		•	30
21.	Indefinite Pronou	118, -		-		-		•				35
ດດ	Formation of No	uns.	-		-	Diaiti	zed by	GC) O Q	le	-	36

CONTENTS.

												PAGE
23. Verbs. Their	r Pa	rts,		-								39
24. Their Tenses,		-	-		•		-					40
25. Imperative M		•		•		-		-				45
26. Optative Mood	đ,	•										46
27. Indefinite Mod	ods,	-		-		-						46
28. Verbal Nouns	,						-					49
29. Negative Verl),	-		-		-		_				52
30. Paradigms of	Ver	bs,	-		-						_	56
31. Causal Verbs.		_								_		73
32. Defective Ver	bs.		_		-				_		_	74
33. Passive Voice,		-		-				_	-	_	•	78
34. Derivation and		rma	tion	of	Ve	rbs.		•	_	_	_	79
35. Adjectives,		-				•						81
36. Adverbs,	•		_				_			-	_	83
		CH	AP1	re r	III							
37. General States	nent	, .				-						84
88. General Rules	of A	Arra	inge	mei	ıt,		_			•	-	84
39. First Case, -		-	•	-	•	-						86
10. Second Case,	-		-						-		-	88
11. Third Case, -		-		-		-						89
2. Fourth Case,	-		•		-		•		-		_	90
3. Fifth Case, -		-		-		•		-		-		93
4. Sixth Case,	-				_		-				_	93
5. Seventh Case,		-		-		-				_		95
6. Eighth Case,	-		-		-		-		-			96
7. Present Tense,		-				-		-		-		96
8. Past Tense,	-		-									97
9. Future Tense,		-		-								98
0. The First class	of I	nde	finit	e M	[ood	s, o	r the	R	elati	ve f	ar-	
ticiples,	-		-		•	•	-		-	_	•	99
l. The Verbal Par	ticip	le,	or t	he I	First	In	defi	nite	Mo	od.		•
of the second				_					, 00t	σle	٠,	0.00

CONTENTS.

											Þ.	AGE.
52 .	The Secon second cl		and Fo	urth	In	defi	nite -	Mod	ds c	f th	e -	108
53.	The Fifth	Indefinit	e Mood	of	the	RACO	nđ c	·loan	at-	the		_
	Infinitive		•	-				-	, •-	-		109
54.	Analysis of	Verbal	Nouns,	,	-				-			110
55.	Use of the	Imperat	ive a nd	O	otati	ve l	Moo	đs,		-		124
56.	Use of the	Negativ	e Verb,	,	-		-		-		-	125
57.	Use of the	Passive	Voice,	-		-		-		-		126
58.	The Verb	என்இறை	5 '7 -		-		-		-		-	127
59.	Compound	Verbs,	-	•		-		•		-		132
50.	The Verb	ஆபிருக்	<i>₽,</i>		-		-		-		-	138
	The Verb	_		-				-		-		137
	The Verb	_	•		-		-		-			141
	The Verbs		å, wr	:GL		,		-		-		142
64.	The Verbs	L 120	ച്ചർഖ,				_		-		-	143
	The Verb	_				_						147
66.	The Verbs	போதும	å, #_(ചര	й. 4	T(T) L	å.					148
	Parts of th	_	-			_	,	<i>5</i> 19				149
	The Prono								defir	ite		
	Demonst					-	-		•		•	153
69.	The Interr				Ī	-				_		157
	The Particl		•	~,	_		_		_			161
	The Partic		-9/-	_	-			_	_			162
	The Partic	_	, 29,	_		-		_		-		165 ·
					٠.	<u>.</u> _	•	_	•	9		
	The Partic							01 3	1	P LLD)		167
	The Partic		_						-		•	169
75.	The Partic				_	-						
		அ ம் or (_	_		-	ک ره	er e	γů,		172
	The Partic				-				-			173
77.	The Particl	les இனி	or இ னி	Cu	ဆ်, န	BC.	ur,	5 (-,	∌ வி		
	g and	ச ்ரோ, ∉	ர <i>ற</i> க்கு ச	ை அம	υ, -	9 ,0	.	9 0, a	nd)	9 %	Ġ	

and spin, sos and (y 0 #	, ela	Œ,	5 /	رفرو	P,
இல்லா வ் ட்டால், _	-		-		-	174
78. The Particles & Alb, Albu	لعجوب	ுக்.	بفات	,		- 177
79. The Particle Carib, -	-				-	179
80. The Particles மாத்திரம், அன	e,, #	lar,	ارى	₩,		- 180
81. The Particles 400 and un					ز ل	,
தம், அ கையால் and அச						
ூலே, தான் and தாம், மே				-		- 181
82. எவ்வாம், சகலமும், அணத்				-		- 185
83. Arrangement of Certain Claus		-	-		•	186
84. Arrangement of Words,	-	-		-		- 190
APPEND	ıx.					
]. Divisions of Time, -			_		_	193
2. Points of the Compass,	-			-		- 195
3. Terms of Relationship, -			-		-	196
4. Hindoo Cycle, and Ages,	-			-		- 201

ABRIDGMENT OF TAMIL GRAMMAR.

CHAPTER I.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

SECTION I.

Tamil Orthography treats of the Form, Names, Sound, Number, Division, Transmutation, Omission, and Augmentation of letters.

SECTION II.

The Tamil language has thirty simple letters, viz. twelve vowels and eighteen consonants:

Five Short Vowels.

🔊 ă; as in America.

ਰ ĕ, as in self.

Ø ĭ, as in still.

െo. as in no.

2 ŭ, as in full.

Seven Long Vowels.

🧸 ā, as in father.

ஐ ȳ, as in eye.

ēē, as in reel.

ஒ ō, as in sole.

em ū, as in rule.

ளை ōū, as in foul.

ø ēÿ, as in they.

Eighteen Consonants.

k, in the beginning, guttural in the middle of a word.

word.

y, as in yes.

r, soft.

s.

soft.

v.

d, hard.

p and b.

m.

y, as in yes.

r, soft.

soft.

v.

v.

5, like a soft th. pr, hard. pr, hard.

Note 1. Consonants without the form of a vowel have the short vowel of a, inherent, as: s ka, s sa. But a dot placed over a consonant shows that it is mute, as: ssow kan, eye.

Note 2. Besides these consonants, two from the Sanscrit are in use, viz. as sh, and so s.

SECTION III.

The Tamil Grammarians have divided the eighteen consonants—

- 1. Into six hard sounding letters, வல்லின எழுத்து, க, ச, ட, த, ப, ற.
- 2. Into six soft sounding letters, மெல்லின எழுத்து, ந, ஞ, ண, க, ம, ன.
- 3. Into middle letters, இடையின் எழுத்து, ய, ா, ல, வ, ழ, ள.

The vowels when subjoined to consonants leave their initial form and appear as in the following table.

ஷை	கௌ	ஙெள	செள	தைள	டைள	Geo ण का	தெள	நெள	பெவ	மென	யெவ	ரெள	வெள	வெள	முன	சௌள	றைன	Gent en
ශ	681	GEU	GFII	தே	GL II	8	ଜୁନ	Gren	6 U	GD	5	S _{TI}	லே	வேர	மூற்	ளோ	වි	କ୍ଷ
G	G&1	GEO	செ	ଚନ୍ଦ୍ର	9	8	15 0	Open	5	Opp	100	GIII	ଚ୍ଚା	9	Ogpi	சைய	ရွိ	8
28	9009	60) [E	69 €	ඩ ම	100 L	60603F	8	60 lb	766	900	700€	600 /T	ଞ	900	<u>б</u>	ELETT.	ക്ക	60.60T
ø	89	8	9	ව	임	9	9	9	공	9	3	9	မွ	ම්	g ₀	ளே	e e	Gest
ور	9 8	O DE	9	ଚନ୍ଦ	Or O	Ge 33	9	Ors.	J	go	<u> </u>	Оп	ତ୍ର	ଡି	a a	ளெ	ê ê	े
1156	46	函	160	1	છ	8	150	ā	30	ફ્ર	30	ಟ	ā	a 0	99	B	ā	ā
ā	Ð	ब	45	6	ဗ	8	15 0	8	7	B	3	Ð	a	ढ	99	6	ø	8
Ħ	94 8	• @	е њ	ಕಾ	自	660f	થ £	9 6	& J	9	ವಿ	æ	*6	್	Ð	erf	•€	90
©	46	强	сф	B	화	exof	460	æ	ని	ė	a	وب	જ	®	એ	ബ	æ	og
a 6°	66 11	EN LEGIS	Œ.	්ඩ	1-1	8	Æ,	115.1	5	9	5	E	ଚ	1/3	Ē	ert II	8	8
ৰ	48	Ø	ь	හ	٦	1000	Æ	16	ם	9	3	E	ઢ	a	34	£10	e	109

SECTION IV.

- 1. To express the names of the letters, nă is added to every short letter, and věnă or yěnă to the long,a s: அ ānă, க kānă, ஆ āvěnā, கா kāvěnā. The classical appellation is, காம், gărăm, added to short letters; and காாம், gārām, to long vowels, as: அ, அகாம்; க, ககாம்; ஆ, ஆகாாம். Long consonants are thus expressed, கா, ககாவாகாாம்; க, சகாவகாாம், &c.
- 2. A letter is called எழுத்த; a vowel, உயிரைழுத்து, letter of life; a consonant, மெய்யெழுத்து, letter of body; a vowel consonant, உயிர்மெய்யேழுத்து, letter of body and life; a short vowel is called தற்றுயிரேழுத்து, and a long vowel கெட்டுயிரேழுத்து.

SECTION V.

- 1. The pronunciation of a long vowel or double consonant requires twice the time necessary for a short vowel or single consonant.
- 2. Every long vowel and every compound syllable, i. e. a syllable composed of two consonants and one vowel, have a particular emphasis or accent; besides this there is no accent in Tamil.

SECTION VI.

Transmutation, தீர்தல், of letters takes place when two words are joined together, as:

- 1. When the preceding word ends in a mute consonant and the next begins with a vowel, that vowel is dropped, and its characteristic mark is joined to the mute consonant, thus: அவன் இல்லை—அவனில்லை, he is not; கோபம் உள்ள—கோபமுள்ள, angry.
- 2. Some words ending in 2, when they are united as adjectives, with some other words, change the 2 into ஐ, namely, ஆண்டு, a year; பண்டு, ancient; அன்று, former time; இன்று, present day; மற்று, other; become பண்டைக்காலம், ancient time, &c.
 - 3. The letters ம், ல், ள், ண், ன், change thus:

* 1	before		æ	is changed into	ங்க.
* <i>i</i> b	-	-	æ		ஞ்ச.
* ம்	-	-	∌		ந்த.
* ல்	-	-	æ		ற்க.
* ல்	-	-	Ŧ		ற்சை.
* ல்	-	-	Ц		ற்ப.
ல்	-	-	∌		ற்ற or ற.

But when a monosyllable ending in &, precedes \$, &s are changed into &p.

When a short monosyllable ending in io, precedes s, ios are changed into issue.

6)	before	:			Ю	is cha	ing	ed	into)	ன்ம.
ள்	-		-		8		-		-		ட்க.
ள்	-	-		-	æ	-		-		-	ட்சு.
ள்	-		-		П		-		· -		ட்ப.
ள்	-	-		-	∌	-		-		-	止ㄴ or ㄴ.

But when a monosyllable ending in in, precedes s, in a are changed to &L.

When a short monosyllable ending in ன், precedes க, ன்க are changed into ண்ண.

ள் before	•	மங்	s changed	into	ண்ம.
ळंग -	-	45	-	-	ட்க.
छं ठा -	-	- #		-	ட்ச.
ळंग -		ப	-	-	ட்ப.
छंठा -	-	- 5		-	ண்ட.

But when a word ending in sw, which, though nominative in form, is to be construed in the oblique case, precedes s, sws are changed into i.e.

When a short monosyllable ending in con, precedes n, com are changed into comom.

ळा	before [.]		#	is chang	ġs.		
ढां	-	-	æ	-	-	-	ற்ச
ढां			Ц	-	-		ற்ப.
ळा	-	-	∌	-	-	-	ன்ற.

But when a word ending in $\dot{\omega}$, which, though nominative in form, is to be construed in the oblique case, precedes $\dot{\varphi}$, $\dot{\omega}$, are changed into \dot{p} .

When a short monosyllable ending in so, precedes s, som are changed into som.

SECTION VII.

The omission, கெடுதல், of letters takes place:

1. With the exception of words containing two short syllables, such as of, us, &c., all words ending in 2, drop this vowel when another vowel follows, thus: Gosfa ship, is written Gosfalfy, clearness is

difficult; ஆடு ஐந்து—ஆடைந்து, five sheep; வந்து இருக் கீறன்—வந்திருக்கிறன், he is come.

2. When polysyllabics and long monosyllabics ending in

	ळंत	prec	ede		Æ	the two	lette	letters become			
	छा	-	-		Т	-	-	-	-	ன.	
	ல்		-	-	ſБ	-	-	-		ன.	
	ள்	-	-		Пъ	-	-	-	-	€ÖÖT.	
	ம்		-	_	Æ	-	-	-		Æ.	
*	ι'n	-	_		10	-	-	-	_	ın.	

When a short monosyllable ending in ம், precedes க, the ம் is changed to க், thus; வெம் and கீர் become வெக்கீர், hot water; செம் and கெல், become செக்கேல், red paddy.

Note. The changes mentioned in section vi. 1; such as are marked with an asterisk [*] in vi. 3; and vii. 2; together with the changes specified in section vii. 1, are commonly observed in Tamil prose writings.

SECTION VIII.

The augmentation, மீகல், of letters takes place:

1. When a word ending in A, A, 2, 22, 22, 3, 3, 3, or 3, 3, is followed by a word beginning with any vowel, the letter is inserted between both. All words ending in 2 that are not words of two short syllables are exceptions and drop the 2, and take the next vowel as mentioned before in section VII. par-

- agraph 1. அல்ல என்றன்—அல்லவென்றன், he said no, &c., அது and இது may follow either rule, as: அது வேண்ன or அதென்ன, what is that.
- 3. When a short monosyllabic word, ending in a consonant, \dot{n} and $\dot{\omega}$ excepted, is followed by a vowel, the consonant is doubled, as: $a \approx 4.60 e^{-1}$.
 - 4. The four letters s, s, s, u, are doubled,
- (1.) When the preceding word ends in A, in these instances: after the infinitive mood, after the indeclinable pronouns, அந்த, that, இந்த, this, எந்த, which; after போல, like, மற்ற, other, அல்ல, no, and after some nouns which have dropped the last letter ம், and end therefore in அ, as: வாச்சொன்னன், he told to come; மாக்கொம்பு, branch of a tree, &c.
- (2.) After every long vowel, as: மீடாத்தகர்ந்தது, the pot broke; ஈச்செத்தது, the fly died, &c.
- ർ, thou, the third person plural neuter of the negative verb, அപൈ, they, (the things), and some words derived from Sanscrit are excepted from this rule.
- (3.) After the verbal participle, terminating in இ, after இன், தன், இப்படி, அப்படி, எப்படி, and after most nouns ending in இ, and standing in the oblique case, as: போற்றிச்சொன்னுன், praising he said; இனிச்செய் வேன், hereafter I will do; அத்தீப்படிம், a fig, &c.

- (4.) After words ending in உ, that have their last consonant double, which include many verbal participles and the dative case, as: வயிற்றுக்கடுப்பு, pain in the stomach; அழைத்துத்தந்தான், he called and gave; மவல க்குப்போ, go to the mountain, &c.; after words of two short syllables, excepting அது, இது, எது, and ஒரு, இரு, as: பொதுச்சொல், a common word; after words ending in ட்பு, ட்த, ற்த, as: நட்புக்கொண்டான், he became friendly; and after nouns ending in உ and standing in the oblique case, as: பாம்புப்படம், the head of a cobra, &c.
- (5.) After the second or accusative case, after இல் வை, and some nouns ending in ஐ, when standing in the oblique case, and after some nouns when united with verbs to form other verbs, as: அதைக்கண்டேன், I saw it; அசைப்பட்டங்கள், they desired, டீட
- (6.) After the verbal participles போய், and ஆய், and after some nouns ending in ய், ர், or ழ், and standing adjectively, as: போய்ச்சொன்னுன், he went and said; போய்ச்செல்வம், false riches, &c.

SECTION IX.

- 1. When சில, some, and பல, many, are written twice, they denote variety, as: சிலசில, some; பலபல, several.
- 2. The word தேன், honey, may be united with other words without any change, as: தேன்கடிது, the honey is thick.
 - 3. The words ஊன், marrow, and தயன், a cloud,

are never changed, as: ஊன்கடுமை, the hardness of the marrow; தயின்தமும், a collection of clouds, &c.

4. When two Sanscrit words are united they often follow the Sanscrit rule. Thus, if a final அ is followed by an initial அ or ஆ, the two vowels coalesce into ஆ, as: வேத ஆகமம்—வேதாகமம்; a book of the Ved; if by இ or ஈ, into ஏ; if by உ, into ஒ, as: சீத இந்து—சீதேந்து, the cold moon; சுத்த உதகம்—சுத் கோககம். clear water.

CHAPTER II.

ETYMOLOGY.

SECTION X.

(See large Grammar § 11.)

The Tamil Grammarians divide all the words of their language into four principal parts, viz. Nouns, Verbs, Particles, and Adjectives. They have no article; the pronoun is included in the noun; the preposition, conjunction and interjection in the particle, and the adverb, in the adjective.

SECTION XI.

(G. § 12.)

The particles, இடைச்சொற்கள், middle words, are connected with other words and have no meaning in themselves. They are divided into eight classes.

- 1. The first class, வேற்றுமையுநபுகள், forms of declession, (see the paradigm of the noun.)
- 2. The second class, விணயுரபுகள், forms of the verb, (see the paradigm of the verb.)
- 3. The third class, seventeen in number, are such as are used to connect the forms of declension and conjugation with the roots, and are called enfisou, viz. spot,

ஆன், இன், அல், அற்று, இற்று, அத்து, அம், தம், நம், நம், ஏ, அ, உ, ஐ, த, ன.

4. The fourth class, are called உவமைச்சொற்கள், particles of similarity or comparison, signifying: as, like as, equal to, according to. They are: போல, ஒப்ப, கோ, கீகா, படி, புளைய, இயைய, கடூப்ப, மான, ஏய்ப்ப, அன்ன, இன்ன.

The nouns with which these are connected may be in the nominative or accusative case.

But படி takes இன், one of the third class particles, before it, as: அதீன்படி, according to that.

ஒப்ப, கோ, கீகா receive also the adverbial form in ஆய், as: ஒப்பாய், கோாய், கீகாாய், ங்ke or near, and require the dative case, as: அதற்கோப்பாய், tike that, டீ. The first five only of this class are used in common language.

5. The fifth class, தத்தம்பொருவாக்காட்டிய இடைச் சொற்கள், are particles which in different connexions have different meanings, they are: ஏ, ஒ, உம், என, என்று, முன், பீன், கீழ், மேல், மட்டு, மற்று, இனி, ஆங்த, அ, ஆ, இ, எ, உ, என்ற, என்னு, ஒடு, தீல், மன், கொல், அந்தீல், அம்ம, மா, க, ஆஅ, அக்தோ, ஐயோ, அன்னே, தொறும், தோறும், ஏனும், ஆனும், &c.

Many of these are used only in poetry; those used in common life are the following: ஏ, ஓ, ஆ, உம், என, என்று, முன், பீன், கீழ், மேல், மட்டு, மற்ற, மற்ற, இனி, தேறும், அதும், அதும்.

Of these σ , Θ , and Θ are the emphatic, disjunctive, and interrogative particles.

zib is mostly conjunctive, and means and, also; sometimes it is disjunctive and means even, than; even, என்ற are conjunctions, and mean that: sometimes. like. as.

முன், or முன்பு, or முன்னமே means before; it is also used absolutely as a conjunction of time, meaning formerlu.

பின், or பின்பு, or பின்னர் means after, behind, both as to time and space; கீழ், under, beneath; மேல், above, over; மட்டு, or மட்டும், until, as far as; மற்று and மற் றும், otherwise, are used adverbially; மற்ற, other, is used adjectively; இனி, or இனிமேல், hereafter, is used absolutely; தோறம், (தொறும் in poetry) every one; அந்தோ and ஐயோ are interjections, and mean oh! alas! ஏனும் and ஆனும் mean even if, at least, although, either, or.

- 6. Besides these many words, though belonging to other parts of speech, are used as prepositions or coniunctions, viz.
- (1.) Infinitives of verbs: கூட, together, from கூடுகிற து, to join; கீட்ட, near, from கீட்டுகிறது, to approach; தவிர, except, from தவிருகிறது, to separate; ஒழிய, except, from ஒழிகிறது, to cease; ஏறக்குறைய, about, nearlymore or less, from ஏறுகிறது, to ascend, increase, and தறைக்றது, to lessen; அற, off, from, without, from அறு க்றது, to cease, to be cut off; குழ, round about, from குழ கீறது, to surround.
- (2.) Verbal participles: தறித்து, with the accusative, means concerning, about, from தறிக்கிறது, to define, point

out; இல்லாமல், and இன்றி, with the nominative, without, from the irregular negative verb இல்; அல்லாமல், and அன்றி, with any case, besides, except, from the irregular negative verb அல்; சூழ்ந்து, from சூழகிறது, and சுற்றி, from சுற்றுகிறது, with the accusative, around; விட்டு, with the accusative, from விடுகிறது, to leave.

- (3.) Subjunctive moods: இல்லாவிட்டால், if not, unless, from இல் and விடுகிறது; ஆணுல், if, from ஆகிறது, to become; ஆகிலும் and ஆணுலும், even if, although, yet, from ஆகிறது.
- (4.) Nouns: பரியந்தம், with the nominative, until; வரையில், the ablative, and வரைக்கம், the dative of வரை, until; அளவும், until, from அளவு, measure; மாத் தீரம், only; மரங்கு, the side, hip, with the genitive, near; போழுது, time, இப்பொழுது, this time, now, அப்போழுது, that time, then, எப்போழுது, which time? when? படி, படிக்க, manner, measure, in order to, that; நிமீத்தம், a sign, omen, for the sake of; உடன், உடனே, immediately; ஆகையால், ablative of the verbal noun ஆகை, being, therefore, wherefore.

7. அசைக்றைக்கீற இடைச்சொற்கள், emphatic, or expletive particles; of these இருந்து, இட்டு, தாம், தான், கின்ற and ஆம், only are used in common language.

Moreover, ஆனவன், என்பவன், ஆனது, ஆவது are affixed to nouns, and என்பது is affixed to nouns and sentences.

There are many more belonging to this class, but they are not used in common language.

SECTION XII.

(G. § 13 to § 16.)

Nouns.

The nouns, பேர்ச்சொல், are divided principally into, (1.) சிறப்புப்பேர், specific nouns, as: சாத்தன், Sāttăn, மா மாம், mango tree, &c. (2.) பொதுப்பேர், generic nouns, as: மனிதன், man, மாம், a tree, &c. The nouns are further divided into, (1.) உயர்திணை, high caste, including words that signify God, men, and spirits, male or female; and (2.) அஃறிவண, no caste, including all other nouns. These two classes are again divided into five smaller ones, called பால், part, which include our genders and numbers; these are,

ஆண்பால், masculine high caste. பெண்பால், feminine high caste. பலர்பால், common high caste. ஒன்றன்பால், singular of no caste. பலவீன்பால், plural of no caste.

- 1. ஆண்பால், masculine high casts, includes all nouns of the male sex of the class உயர்திவண, in the singular number, as: அவன், மகன், புருடன், &c.
- 2. பெண்பால், feminine high caste, includes all nouns of the female sex of the உயர்திணை, in the singular number, as: அவள், மகள், ஸ்தீரீ, &c.
- 3. பலர்பால், common high caste, comprehends the plural of the masculine nouns, as: புநடர்; the plural

of the feminine nouns, as: பெண்கள்; and the plural common to both, as: அவர்கள், டே.

- 4. ஒன்றன்பால், singular no caste, includes all nouns of அஃறிவண, in the singular number, as: வீடு, கத்தி, காய், டே.
- 5. பலவின்பால், *plural no caste*, includes all nouns of அஃரிவண, in the plural number, as: வீடுகள், &c.

Note. The plural is formed by adding கன் to the singular, as: பெண், பெண்கள்; nouns of the உயர் திணை class ending in கூ, change கூ to ர், to form the plural, to which கன் may be added, as: புடுடன், புடு டர், புடுடர்கள், and some of them take மார் between the singular and plural terminations, as: தகப்பன், father, தகப்பண்மார்கள், fathers.

SECTION XIII.

(G. § 16.)

In declining the noun, the Tamulians have eight cases, called வேற்றுமையுநபுகள், forms of changes.

- 1. The first case, எழுவாய், or கருத்தா, the beginning, the first, is our nominative. The noun itself appears in this case without addition, as: மனிதன், a man, கல்லி, science, கோவு, pain, லில், a bow, &c.
- 2. The second case, ஐவேற்றுமை, adds only ஐ to the nominative, as: மனிதவன, the man, கல்வியை, கே வை, வில்வல, &c. It is our accusative.
 - 3. The third case is our ablative and is, (1.) instru-

mental, by adding to the nominative அல், as: மனித றைல், by the man, தல்வியால், &c.; and (2.) social, by adding ஒடு or உடனே, as: மனிகஹேடு, மனிகனுடனே, with the man: ChanGain (3. &c.

- 4. The fourth case adds த, க்த or உக்த, and is our dative, as: மனிதனுக்கு, to the man, கல்விக்கு, கோவு க்த; வில்வுக்த, மனிதர்க்த, to men.
- 5. The fifth case is an ablative of separation, or motion, and adds Qio or Qio, as: மனிதனில், from the man. கல்வியில், &c.; very often the particle இநந்து or நீன்று is added to this case, as: மனிதனிலிருந்து, மனிதனி னின்று.
- 6. The sixth case is our genitive, and adds as or உடைய, as: மனிதனது or மனிதனுடைய, of the man, &c. Neuter nouns, particularly such as end in a vowel, take இன் before this termination, as: கல்வியினுடைய, கல்வியினது, &c. The termination is sometimes dropped thus: கல்வியின், கோவின்.
- 7. The seventh case is an ablative of place, and is expressed in poetry by 28 terminations; but in common Tamil only இல், இடத்தில் are in use, as: மனிதனில், மனிதனிடத்தில், at or in the man, &c.
- 8. The eighth case called விளிவேற்றுமை, mode of calling, is our vocative, and adds of to the nominative, ав: மனிகனே, மாணமே, O man! O death! &c.

Nouns ending in Q, may change the short vowel இ into the long vowel ஈ. as: கம்பி, கம்பி, O Lord! கவாமீ. சுவாமீ.

Words ending in so, sometimes drop the str, to

form the eighth case, as: இறைவன், இறைவ, O King! or lengthen the last vowel, as: பெருமன், பெருமான், O thou great one! or drop the spisi and add sa, sa Coun, or ஏ. as: இறைவன், இறைவா, O King! அய்யன், அய் யாவோ, O sir! ஐயன், ஐயே. O sir!

Note 1. The சார்யை, இன் and அன் may be inserted before the termination of any case excepting the vocative. Particularly in nouns that do not end in ன். as: கல்வி, second case, கல்வியிண, &c. The dative may therefore take இனுக்கு, or இற்கு, or அற்கு, as: அதிற்த, or அதற்த, to that.

Note 2. In forming the cases the common rules of changes and augmentation of letters are observed: for கல்வியை, see & VIII. 2. கோவை, see & VII. 1. வில்லை, see & viii. 3.

PARADIGM OF THE NOUN.

Singular.

- 1. Nom. மனிகன், a man.
- 2. Acc. மனிதவன, a man.
- 3. Abl. instr. மனிதனுல், by a man.

Abl. soc.
$$\left\{ \begin{array}{ll} \omega \text{ of } \mathfrak{sGO}(\mathfrak{g}, \omega \text{ of }) \\ \mathfrak{sgn} \sqcup \text{Got}, \end{array} \right\}$$
 with a man.

4. Dat. மனிதனுக்கு, to ம மாகு.

5. Abl. mot.

(மனிதனில், மனிதனிலி நிக்கு, மனிதனினி நிக்கு, மனிதனினி ண்று,

- 6. Gen. மனிதனுடைய, மனிதனது, of a man.
- 7. Abl. loc. $\left\{ \begin{array}{ll} \omega$ னிதனிடத்தீல், ω at or in a man.
- 8. Voc. மனிதனே, O man!

Plural.

- 1. Nom. மனிதர் or மனிதர்கள், men.
- 2. Acc. மனிதரை or மனிதர்களை, men.
- 3. Abl. instr. மனிதாரல் or மனிதர்களால், by men.
 Abl. soc. {மனிதரோடு or மனி } with men.
- 4. Dat. { மனிதருக்கு or மனிதர்க்கு } to men.
- 5. Abl. mot. மனிதரில் or மனிதர்க வில், மனிதர்களின், மனிதர்களிலிருந்து, மனிதர்களினின்று,
- 6. Gen. $\left\{ egin{array}{ll} \omega & ext{of தருடைய or மனிதர்களு} \\ டைய, மனிதர்களினது, \end{array}
 ight\} of men.$
- 7. Abl. loc. மனிதரிடத்தில் or மனிதர் at or in களிடத்தில், மனிதர்களில், men.
- 8. Voc. மனிதரே or மனிதர்களே, O men!

All nouns are declined like woofgood with the following exceptions.

- 1. Nouns ending in அம், drop this syllable in the singular and add the சார்யை, அத்து before the terminations, excepting the vocative, as:
 - 1. юпю, a tree.
 - 2. மாத்தை or மாத்திவை, a tree.

- 3. மாத்தால் or மாத்தினுல், by a tree. மாத்தோடு or மாத்தினுடு, with a tree.
- 4. மாத்துக்கு or மாத்திற்கு, to a tree.
- 5. மாத்தில் or மாத்தினில், from a tree.
- 6. மாத்தினுடைய, of a tree.
- 7. மாத்தினிடத்தில், at or in a tree.
- 8. ипСи, O tree!

The Plural is மாங்கள், &c.

2. Nouns ending in G and g preceded only by one syllable with a long vowel, or preceded by more than one syllable with short vowels, have the \dot{L} and \dot{p} doubled before they receive the terminations, excepting the vocative case and the plural number, as:

வீடு, house, வீட்டை, வீட்டால், &c. ஆறு, river, ஆற்றை, ஆற்றல், &c. தகடு, a flat metal plate, ககட்டை, &c.

THE OBLIQUE CASE.

Besides the eight cases already mentioned there is a case, called the general oblique case. It is used either as the 6th or as the 7th case. It is variously formed. One form of it is made by adding the sufferm, Set, as:

புல்லின்வண்ணம், the colour of the grass. வாக்கியத்தின்பொருள், the substance of a verse.

Nouns ending in அம், may be formed in it by changing அம் to அத்து, as: முகத்துச்சாயல், the likeness of the face.

Some nouns ending in Mi, drop the is merely, as: westering, distress of mind.

Nouns ending in a vowel receive no change, as:

Nouns ending in & and g, (of the description mentioned above) double these consonants to form it, as: காட்டுவழ், the forest road; வயிற்றுவல், pain of or in the belly.

The nominative is sometimes used for this oblique case, as: பாற்கடல், the sea of milk.

SECTION XIV.

(G. § 17.)

Pronouns.

The Tamulians class the pronouns with the nouns. They are divided into தன்மைப்பேர்ச்சொல், nouns referring to ourselves; முன்னி டைப்பேர்ச்சொல், nouns referring to persons standing before us; படர்க்கைப்பேர்ச்சோல், nouns referring to persons or things at a distance; வினுப்பேர்ச்சொல், nouns of interrogation; and எண்ணின்பேர்ச்சொல், nouns of number.

What we denominate "person" the Tamulians call இடம், place, and thus the first person is called தன்மை மீடம், the second முன்னிலையீடம், and the third படர்க்கையீடம்.

SECTION XV.

(G. § 18.)

The தன்மையிடத்துப்போச்சொல், words of the first

person, are நான், I, in the singular; and நாம் and நாங் கன், we, in the plural. They are thus declined:

Singular.

- 1. கான், *I*.
- 2. என்வன, me.
- 3. என்னுல், by me. என்னேடு, with me.
- 4. எனக்த, to me.
- 5. { என்னில், என்னிலிருந்து, } from me.
- 6. என், எனது, என்னுடைய, of me.
- 7. என்னிடத்தீல், என்னில், in or at me.

Plural.

- 1. நாம் or நாங்கள், we.
- 2. நம்மை or எங்களை, us.
- 3. நம்மால் or எங்களால், by பக. நம்மோடு or எங்களோடு, with பக.
- 4. நமக்த or எங்களுக்த, to us.
- 5. { நம்மீல் or எங்களில், நம்மிலிருந்து, or எங்களிலிருந்து, நம்மினின்று or } from us. எங்களினின்று.
- 6. { நம் or எங்கள், நமது or எங்களது, } of us.
- 7. { நம்மீடத்தீல் or எங்களிடத்தீல், } in or at us.

It is of great importance to bear in mind that made includes yourself and the person or persons to whom you speak, but make an excludes the latter.

SECTION XVI.

(G. §. 19.)

The முன்னிலையடத்துப்பேர்ச்சொல், words of the second person, are: கீ, thou, in the singular; and கீங்கள், you, in the plural. They are thus declined:

Singular.

- 1. R, thou.
- 2. உன்வன, thee.
- 3. உன்னல், by thee. உன்னேடு, with thee.
- 4. உனக்கு, to thee.
- 5. { உன்னில் or உன்னிலிருந்து, உன் } from thee.
- 6. உன், உனது, உன்னுடைய, of thee.
- 7. உன்னிடத்தீல், உன்னில், in or at thee.

Plural.

- 1. கீங்கள், you.
- 2. உங்களை, you.
- 3. உங்களால், by you. உங்களோடு, with you.
- 4. உங்களுக்கு, to you.
- 5. { உங்களில், உங்களிலிருந்து, } from you.
- 6. உங்கள், உங்களது, உங்களுடைய, of you.
- 7. உங்களிடத்தில், உங்களில், in or at you.

கங்கள், besides being used simply as a plural, is

also applied to a single person, as an honorific by inferiors to superiors. When equals address each other politely they use kin, which is thus declined:

- 1. får. thou or vou.
- 2. உம்மை, thee or you.
- 3. உம்மால, by thee or you. உம்மோடு, with thee or you.
- 4. 2055, to thee or you.
- 5. { உம்மீல், உம்மிலிருந்து, } from thee or you.
- 6. உமது, உம்முடைய, of thee or you.
- 7. உம்மீடத்தில், உம்மில், in or at thee, or you.

SECTION XVII.

(G. § 20.)

1. The படர்க்கைப்பேர்ச்சொல், nouns referring to the persons or things of which we speak, are masculine, feminine and neuter. They are the same as the demonstrative pronouns, called in Tamil &LGUQuit, and are of two sorts; the one pointing out the remote person or thing, and the other that which is near to us. They are formed of the demonstrative letters a and 2 with the terminations அன், அள், and து, thus:

அவன், he or that man; இவன், he or this man. அவள், she or that woman; இவள், she or this woman. இது, it or this thing. அது, it or that thing;

2. The masculine and feminine of these pronouns are declined like மனிதன், thus:

Singular.

- 1. அவன், இவன், he; அவள், இவள், she.
- 2. அவகன, இவகன, him; அவகன, இவகள, her, &c.

Plural.

- 1. அவர் or அவர்கள், those; இவர் or இவர்கள், these men or women.
- 2. அவரை or அவர்களை, those; இவரை or இவர்களை, these men or women, &c.

அவர்கள், commonly used as the plural.

அவர் commonly and அவர்கள், sometimes applied as honorifics to single persons.

3. The neuter pronoun is thus declined:

Singular.

1. அது, that.	இது, this.
2. அதை, or அதவன, that.	இதை or இத வ ை, <i>this.</i>
3. அ த்ஞல், or } <i>by that.</i>	இத்னுல் or } by this.
அதஞல்,	இதனுல்,
அத்னேடு or } அதனேடு,	<pre> Ø g g g g g g g g g g g g</pre>
4. அதுக்கு or	இதுக்கு or
அதீற்கு or	இதிற்கு or <i>to this.</i>
அதற்கு,	இதற்கு,
5. அதில் or அதி	இதில் or இதி
னில் or அதனி <i>from</i>	னில் or இத
ல் or அதனிலி <i>that.</i>	னில் or இதி
நக்து, &c.	லிருக்து, டூடை

7. அதீனிடத்தீல், } at or in இதீனிடத்தீல், } at or in அதீல், } that. இதீல, } this.

Plural.

- 1. அவை, or அவைகள், those.
- 2. அவற்றை, or அவைகளா, those.
- 3. அவற்றல், or அவைகளால், or அவற் by those. றீனுல், or அவைகளினுல்,
 - அவற்றேடு, or அவைகளோடு, or அவ \dot{p} \dot{p} with those. \dot{p} GGO, or அவைகளிஞேடு,
- 4. அவற்றுக்கு, or அவைகளுக்கு, or அவற்றிற்கு, to those.
- அவற்றில், or அவைகளில், அவற்றிலிருந்து, \ from
 or அவைகளிலிருந்து, or அவற்றினில், \ those.
- 6. அவற்றினுடைய, or அவைகளுடைய, அவற்றினது, or அவைகளினது,
- 7. அவற்றின்டத்தில், or அவைகளின்டத்தில் at or in அவற்றில், or அவைகளில்,

இவை or இவைகள் declined in the same way.

Note. அவற்றை and இவற்றை are formed of the letters அ and இ, of அற்று one of the சாரியை, and of the terminations.

4. The demonstrative letters A and 2 may also be prefixed to nouns of any number, gender or case. If the noun begins with a consonant, the consonant is double-

ed; if it begins with a vowel, double & comes between the prefix and the initial vowel of the noun, as:

அம்மனிதன், that man; இம்மணிதன், this man. அவ்வாலயம், that temple; இவ்வாலயம், this temple.

- 5. The two demonstrative pronouns அக்க and இக்க (குட்டுப்பேரேச்சம்) defective demonstrative nouns, are prefixed as adjectives to any noun, as: அக்தமவை, that mountain; இக்தப்பக்கம், this side. They can never be used by themselves.
- 6. Another form of indefinite demonstrative pronouns is அன்ன, இன்ன, such. They form nouns by affixing the usual personal terminations and are declined, as: அன்னுன், such a man; அன்னுள், such a man; அன்னுள், such a woman; அன்னது, such a thing; இன்னது, such a thing.

இன்ன is used adjectively, as; இன்னமனிதன், such a man; இன்னபெண், such a woman. It is commonly doubled, as: இன்னவின்னமனிதன், such and such a man, &c.

7. The Tamulians have also a reciprocal pronoun referring to the படர்க்கைப்பேர், or third person, viz. தான், himself, herself, and itself; plural தாங்கள் and தாம். It is thus declined:

Singular.

- 1. snoot, himself, herself, itself.
- 2. தன்வன, himself, &c.
- 3. தன்னல், by himself, &c. தன்னுடு, with himself, &c.
- 4. தனக்கு, to himself, &c.

- 5. தன்னில், தன்னிலிநந்து, from himself, &c.
- 6. தன், தன்னுடைய, தனது, of himself, &c.
- 7. தன்னீடத்தில், தன்னில், at or in himself, &c.

Plural.

Mas. and Fem.

Mas. Fem. and Neuter.

- 1. தாங்கள்.
- 2. தங்களை.
- 3. தங்களால், த**ங்களே**டு,
- 4. தங்களுக்கு,
- 5. தங்களில், தங் 🤰 களிலிருந்து,
- 6. தங்கள், தங்க 🤇 ளடைய.
- 7. தங்களிடத்தில், 🤾 தங்களில்.

- காம், themselves. தம்மை, themselves.
- தம்மால், by themselves.
- தம்மோடு, with themselves.
- தமக்கு, to themselves.
- தம்மீல், தம்மீ from themselves.
- தமது, தம்மு of themselves.
- தம்மீடத்தில், } at or in them-

தாங்கள் and தாம் are also used as honorifics; the former by an inferior to a superior, the latter among equals, as: தாங்கள்சொன்னீர்கள், you said.

SECTION XVIII.

(G. § 21.)

1. The விரைப்போச்சொல், interrogative pronoun, is formed by the letters of and we with the usual personal terminations, as:

, எவன் Or யாவன். ദേഖണ് Or ധിവണ്. எது or யாது,

who? what man? who? what woman? which? what thing? The plural is statistic or unait, who? what men or women? stat or unasa, which or what things?

They are declined like அவன், அவள், அது, அவர்கள் and அவை.

unant is used in the plural (mas. and fem.) only. It is sometimes contracted to unit which is also used only in the plural.

But there is another யார், commonly contracted into ஆர், which is used in the singular or plural, (mas. and fem.) as: ஆர் வக்தான், வக்தான், or வக்தாள்கள்.

- 2. The interrogative letter எ is, like the demonstrative letters அ and இ, prefixed to any nouns, and means what? as: எம்மனிதன், what man? எவ்லூர், what village? &c.
- 3. The particle உம் added to any such interrogative pronoun, changes it to a distributive pronoun, as:

எவனும், யாவனும், every man.

எவளும், யாவளும், every woman.

எதுவும், யாவும், every thing.

எவர்களும், யாவநம், all men or women.

எவையும், யாவையும், all things whatsoever.

When declined the உம் is always put after the case, as: எவர்களையும், யாவற்றையும், &c.

- 4. Instead of எ, the adjective form எந்த is most commonly used. It is prefixed to nouns, as: எந்தமனி தன், what man? &c.
- 5. The addition of ஆக்லும் or ஆணுலம், changes these interrogative to indefinite pronouns, thus: எவன க்லும், any one man; எவளுக்லும், any one woman; எதாக்லும், any one thing; யாவாரணைய், any persons, &c.

6. If the interrogative letter எ or adjective எந்த be prefixed to nouns and உம், or ஆக்லும், ஆனுலம் be affixed to them, such nouns will be affected in the manner described in the 3d and 5th subdivisions of this section, thus:

எப்பட்டினமும், or எந்தப்பட்டினமும், every city. எம்மனிதனுக்லும், or எந்தமனிதனுலும், any man.

SECTION XIX.

(G. § 22.)

1. The எண்ணின்பேர், nouns of numbers, with their figures are these:

-												
ஒன்று.	-	-		-		-		-		8		1
இாண்டு	-		-		-		-		-	6		2
முன்று.	-	-		-		-		-		ſħη		3
நாலு or நான்	த		-		-		-		-	æ		4
ஐந்து, vulgarly		5 5 7 .		-		-		_		ß		5
ஆறு	-		-		-		-		-	5n		6
ஏழ	-	-		-		-		-		4		7
எட்டு	-		-		-		-		-	Ð		8
ஒன்பது.	-	-		-		-		_		5n		9
பத்து	-		_		-		-		_	ω		10
பத்னென்று.	-	-		_		-		_		ωக		11
பன்னிரண்டு.	-		-		-		-		-	We		12
பதின்முன்று		_		-		-		_		ωm		13
பத்னுன்த.	-		-		-		-			ωச		14
&c.	-		_		-		_		_	,,	&c.	
பத்தொன்பது.		-		_		-		-		ws.		19
இருபது.	-		-		-		- Dig		.,(່ຍພ	gle	20

PRONOUNS.

இருபத்தொன்	. gg		_		-		-		-		2.5		21
&c.	-		-		-		-		-		,,	&c.	
முப்பது.			-		-		-	•	-		mu)		30
<i>மு</i> ப்பத்தொன்	ду.		-			-		-		-	lm&		31
&c.	-		-		-		-		-		,,	&c.	
காற்பது.		-		-		-		-		-	æω		40
ஐம்பது.	-		-		-		-		-		ருω		50
அறுபது.		-		-		-		-		-	சூல		60
எழுபது.	-		-		-		-		-		øω		70
எண்பது.		-		-		-		-		-	əω		80
தொண்ணூ ற	۱.		-		-		-		-		௯௰		90
தொண் ணூற்	ලෙ	ळा	gy,			-		-			5 n €s		91
&c.	-		-		-		-		-		,,	&c.	
தூறு		-		-		-	,	-			m		100
நூ ற்றென்று.			-		-		-		-		m s		101
நூற்றிரண்டு.		-		-		-		-		-	me		102
நூற்றுமுன்று	,			~		-		-			mm		103
&c.	_		-		-		-				,,	&c.	
நூற்றுப்பத்து	•			-		-		-		-	mω	•	110
தூற்றிருபது.			-		-		-		-		mew		120
நூற்றுமுப்பத	•		-		-			-			ள்கல		130
&c.			-		-		-		-		,,	&c.	
இருநூறு.		-		-		-		-		-	e.m		200
முக்நூறு.	-		-		-		-		-		mm		300
கானூற.		-		-		-		-		-	æm		400
ஐந்நூறு.	-		-		-		-		-		டூள		500
அறு நூறு.		-		-		_		-		-	<i>a</i> n∩⊓		600
எழநாறு.	-		-		-		-		-		สก		700
எண்ணூறு.		-		-		-		-		-	ചന		800
தோள்ளாயிர	Ġ.		-		-		-	D	igtize		Gan	gle	900

தெள்ளாயிரத்தொன்று	& ma	901
தெள்ளாயிரத்திரண்டு	ക്കസമ	920
&c	,, &	kc.
ஆயோம்	5 5	1000
ஆயிரத்தொன்று	த ்⊛	1001
&c	" ć	kc.
ஆயோத்துப்பத் து. – – –	௲ω	1010
ஆயாத்திரபது	∌ εω	1020
&c	,, 6	kc.
ஆயாத்தொருநூறு	∌ m	1100
ஆயிரத்திருநாறு	உ உய	1200
&c	,, &	c.
இாண்டோயிரம் or ஈாராபிரம்	6.43	2000
மூவாயிாம்	lTn ∰a	3000
காலாயிாம்	சத	4000
ஐயாயிாம்		5000
ஆறயிாம்	€m ∰as	6000
ஏழோயிாம்	எத	7000
எண்ணுயாம்	அது	8000
ஒன்பத்னுயாம். <i></i> -	குத	9000
பத்னுயிாம்	ωத	10,00 0
இருபதீ <u>ண</u> யோம்	ഉയള്ള	20,000
முப்பதினுயிாம்	љwத	30,000
&c	" &	c.
தொண்ணூறயிாம்	കയക്ട	90,000
நூறுயிாம் or இலட்சம். - -	ளது	100,000
இநுநாறயிாம் or இாண்டிலட்சம். -	உறது	200,000
&c	" &c	•
நாறு இலட்சம் or கோடி. – பாடி	ed by G90 ,	000,000

- 2. The cardinal numbers may be considered either as nouns or adjectives; when used as nouns, they are placed after the noun and declined, as: கல்லோன்று, one stone; கல்லிரண்டு, கல்லிரண்டை, two stones; கல்லிரண்டால், டே. மாமுன்று, three trees.
- 3. When they are used as adjectives, they are placed before the noun and not declined, as: இாண்டுபேர், two names or persons; மன்றுகல், three stones, &c. ஒன்று when an adjective is often changed into ஒரு, as: ஒரு மனிதன், one man or a man, and often to ஓர், as: ஓரான், one person.
- 4. When united with some nouns, some of them undergo a change, thus:

இாண்டு, 2, may become இர as இருபது, twenty. இருதவை, two heads.

மூன்று, 3, ,, ,, மூ or மு as மூவாயிரம், three thousand, முக்காலம், the three tenses.

காலு, 4, " " நால் as காற்பது, forty.

ஐந்து, 5, ,, ,, **ஐந் as ஐங்கலம், five kalams. ஐம்பது, fifty.

ஆறு, 6, " "அறு as அறுபது, sixty.

ஏழ், 7, " " ஏழ் as எழ்பது, seventy. எட்டு, 8, " " எண் as எண்கலம், eight kalams.

5. Appellative nouns are formed of the cardinal numbers, thus: of ஒரு, 1, is made ஒருவன் (vulgarly,

^{*} h is then changed to the soft letter which corresponds to the following hard one.

ஒருத்தன்) one, a person, a certain man. ஒருத்தி, a female, a certain woman.

of இரு 2 இருவர், two persons. ,, மு 3 மூவர், three persons. ,, நால் 4 நால்வர், four persons. .. g 5 ஐவர், five persons.

Whether male or female.

6. To express "one by one", "two and two," &c. they repeat the initial letter of each number as far as ten, inclusive. (ஒன்பது 9 excepted.) If the initial letter be long, it is shortened when repeated, and if it be a consonant, its mute intervenes; if it be a vowel, double வ comes between, (இவைக்கு excepted.)

ஒவ்வோன்று, one by one. இவ்விரண்டு. two by two. three and three. மும்முன்று, four and four. கக்காவு. five and five. ஐவைந்து. six and six. அவ்வாறு, seven and seven. எவ்வேழ், எவ்வெட்டு, by eights. பப்பத்து, by tens.

7. Ordinal numbers are formed by adding the future participle ஆம், to the cardinal; excepting ஒன்று, for which முதல் the beginning, is used, as: முதலாம், the first; இாண்டாம், the second, பத்தோம், the eleventh, &c. To form adverbs the verbal noun, ஆவது is added, as: முதலாவது, first; இாண்டாவது, secondly, &c.

SECTION XX.

(G. § 23.)

There are some indefinite pronouns.

1. சில, some; பல, several, various.

They are used as adjectives, as: சலமனிதர், some men; பலபேர்கள், various persons. They are also used as nouns, and receiving the usual plural terminations are regularly declined, thus:

- 1. சிலர், some persons; சில, some things.
- 2. சிலரை, some persons; சிலவற்றை, some things.
- 3. சிலாரல், by some persons ; சிலவற்றல், by some things,&c. &c. &c. &c.
- 1. பலர், various persons; பல, various things.
- 2. பலரை, various persons; பலவற்றை, various things.
- 3. பலாால், by various persons; பலவற்றல், by various things, &c.

&c. &c. &c.

2. எல்லாம், சகலமும், அணைத்தும், முழமையும், முழ வதும், all.

These are thus declined:

- 1. எல்லாம், சகலமும், அவைத்தும், முழமையும், முழ வதும், all things.
- 2. எல்லாவற்றையும், சகலத்தையும், அணத்தையும், முழுமையையும், முழுவதையும், all things.
- 3. எல்லாவற்றலும், சகலத்தாலும், அவனத்தாலும், முழ மையாலும், முழுவதாலும், by all things

எல்லாவற்றேடும், சகலத்தோடும், அணத்தோடும், முழமையோடும், முழுவதோடும், with all things.

4. எல்லாவற்றிற்கும், சகலத்திற்கும், அணத்திற்கும், முழமைக்கும், முழவதிற்கும், to all things, &c.

The first three are also formed as personal nouns, thus: 1. எல்லாரம், சகலரம், அவனவரம், all persons. 2. எல்லாளையும், சகலளையும், அவனவளையும், all persons, 3. எல்லாளலும், சகலளாலும், அவனவளாலும், by all persons, &c.

SECTION XXI.

(G. § 24.)

Some remarks respecting the formation of nouns. There are various kinds of nouns, as:

- 1. Primitive nouns, as: மாம், மகன், தாய், &c.
- 2. Nouns formed from the oblique case and the terminations 头o and 头前, as:

தருமம், charity ; தருமவான், a charitable man.

3. Personal nouns formed from other nouns by dropping the last syllable, and adding so for the masculine, and 2 for the feminine, as: Asissimi, anger; asis

காமன், an angry man, அகங்கார், an angry voman; அழ க, beauty; அழகன், a beautiful man, அழக், a beautiful woman, &c. In some nouns derived from the Sanscrit, இ serves for both masculine and feminine, as: பாவம், ain; பாகி, a sinner; கோபம், anger; கோடி, an angry person, &c.

- 4. Some personal nouns are formed by adding to the oblique case the termination காரன், for the masculine, and காரீ, for the feminine, as: உவல, work; வேலைக்காரன், masculine, வேலைக்காரி, feminine, a labourer; ஆடு, sheep; ஆட்டுக்காரன், a man who keeps sheep, ஆட்டுக்காரி, a woman who keeps sheep.
- 5. Others are formed by adding to nouns, ஆளி and சாலி, both for masculine and feminine; and if the noun ends in ம், the ம் is dropped, as: கடன், debt; கட ஞனி, a debtor, whether male or female. குற்றம், guilt; தற்றவாளி, a guilty person; பாக்கியம், happiness; பாக்கியசாலி, a happy person; புத்தி, understanding; புத் தேசாலி, a clever person.
- 6. Various nouns are formed from numbers, (see Sec. XIX. 5,) others from verbs, (see the verb.) Abstract nouns are formed from some obsolete roots by adding மை to them, as: சீறு, small; சீறமை, smallness; புது, new; புதுமை, newness; பெரு, great; பெருமை, greatness, &c.

Appellatives may be formed from these by dropping மை, changing உ into இ, and adding அன், அவன், ஆன், ஒன், for the masculine singular; அன், அவள், ஆள், ஒள், for the feminine singular; அது, து, for the neuter singular; அர், அவர், ஆர், ஒர், for the mas. and fem. plural; அவை, அன, அ, for the neuter plural. Thus: from சீறுமை, சீறி யன், சீறியவன், சீறியான், or சீறியோன், a small man; சீறியள், சீறியவள், சீறியாள், சீறியாள், a small woman; சீறியது, சீறிது, a small thing; சீறியர், சீறியவர், சீறியார், சீறியார், சீறியார், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியனர், சீறியன், சீறியன்,

From the abstract nouns above mentioned are formed also a peculiar kind of appellative nouns by dropping $\infty \omega$, changing 2 into 2, and adding the following verbal terminations, thus:

Verbal Terminations. Appellatives from #pm.

Singular.

1. pers. ஏன், சிறியேன், I who am a small person.
2. pers. ஐ, ஆய், சிறியோய், { thou who art a தம், சிறியோய், } small person.
3. pers. m. அன், சிறியன், he who is a small man.
3. pers. f. அள், சிறியன், she who is a small woman.

3. pers. n. து, சீற்து, it which is a small thing.

Plural.

- 1. pers. ஏம், சிறியேம், or அம், சிறியம், 2. pers. ஈர், சிறியர், you who are small persons. 3. pers. இர், சிறியர், they who are small persons.
- 3. pers. n. அ, சிறிய, or அன, சிறியன, } they which are small things.

And these appellative nouns thus formed with verbal terminations may be regularly declined, thus:

and in like manner through all the persons and cases both in the singular and plural numbers.

Thus: கொடியோய்சீறியேவனயடித்தாய், thou a cruel person hast beaten me a small person. These concise forms are however almost altogether confined to poetry.

SECTION XXII.

(G. § 25 to § 28.)

Verbs.

To Tamil verbs belong, மூடைம், the three persons. ஐம்பால், five divisions of gender and number. பததி, the root. லிததி, terminating particles. முக்காலம், the three tenses. ஏவல், the imperative mood. வியங்கோள், the optative mood. எச்சம், the indefinite mood. தொழிற்பெயர், the verbal nouns. எதீர்மறை, the negative form of the verb.

- 1. About முவிடம் and ஐம்பால், see § xII. and § xIV.
- 2. பகுதி, the root of the verb, has no specific meaning as such, but only indicates the general idea of the verb, as: கட, walk, படி, learn, விடு, leave, போ, go, &c.
- 3. The Ses is the affix by which the gender, number, and person are distinguished, as:

Singular.

Com.	ஏன்,	என்,	அன்,	or	अला	ळा,	I.
do.	ஆய்,	-	æ ,	-	Ø,		thou.
Mas.	ஆன்,	•	அனன்,			-	he.
Fem.	ஆள்,	-	அனள்,			-	she.
Neuter	∌ [5],	•	5 ,			-	it.

Plural.

Com.	ஒம்,	அனம்,	ஏம், அம், or ஆம்,	we.
do.	ĦÌ,	•	சுர்கள், or இர், -	you.
Mas. Fem.	ஆர்,	-	ஆர்கள், பு. அனர்,	they.
Neuter	<i>9</i> ા,	-	அன,	they.

SECTION XXIII.

(G. § 28.)

The முக்காலம், or the three tenses, are கீகழ்காலம், present tense. இறந்தகாலம், or போனகாலம், past tense. எதீர்காலம், or வருங்காலம், future tense. These tenses are formed by the aid of certain particles, called இடைக்கைச்சொற்கள், which connect the terminations, mentioned above, with the root; and these particles thus inserted between the root and the several affixes are the characteristics by which each tense is distinguished.

1. The characteristics of the present tense are so, som, thus:

கடக்கீறேன், or கடக்கீன்றேன், *I walk.* கடக்கீரேம், or கடக்கீன்ரேம், *we walk, டூட*

- Note 1. &&&, when inserted generally denotes a transitive, and &&, an intransitive verb. But there are many exceptions to this.
- Note 2. The third pers. neut. plural is always formed with கீன்ற, thus: கடக்கீன்றன. The vulgar use கடக் த்து, for the third pers. neut. of both persons.
- 2. The characteristic middle particles of the past tense are ϕ , \dot{L} , \dot{p} , and $\Omega \dot{\omega}$.
- (1.) Roots ending with the mutes u, n, or with the vowels ஆ, இ, a, sear, g, and forming the present tense by ssay, have 多多, in the past, as:

மேய்க்கேறேன், I feed, வளர்க்கிறேன், I train up, படிக்கிறேன், I learn, படுக்கிறேன், I lie down, படுக்கிறேன், I lie down,

The only exception is, இருக்கீறேன், I கூ, இருக்தேன், I மக.

Note. In conversation ## is often substituted for ##, thus:

For படித்தேன், they say, படிக்கேன், *I learned*. For வைத்தேன், , வைச்சேன், *I put*.

- (2.) Roots ending in அ, and forming the present tense with க்கீற, receive க்த், as: மறக்கீறேன், I forget, மறக்தேன், I forgot, &c.
- (3.) Roots ending in க்க, ங்க, க, சு, த, பு, ணு, னு, வ, மு, டு, று, ள்ளு, and forming the present tense with கிற, receive இன் before the terminations, as:

ஆக்குக்றேன், I make, தூங்குக்றேன், I sleep, பேசுக்றேன், I speak, ஆக்கீனேன், I made. தூங்கீனேன், I slept. பேசீனேன், I spoke, &c.

Exceptions are:

லிள்ளுக்றேன், I open, விண்டேன், I opened. ஈனுக்றேன், I bring forth, ஈன்றேன், I brought forth. போடுக்றேன், I put, போட்டேன், I put. கோள்ளுக்றேன், I take or get, கொண்டேன், I took or got.

But all roots ending in \mathfrak{G} , \mathfrak{G} , and \mathfrak{W} , preceded by one short syllable, simply double the last consonant and then receive the terminations, as:

தகுக்றேன், I am fit, தக்கேன், I was fit. விடுக்றேன், I leave, விட்டேன், I left. பெறுக்றேன், I get, பேற்றேன், I got.

Note. The third person singular neuter in the past tense of verbs having the characteristic இன் would be இன்கு; but this is changed to இற்று, thus: போயினேன், I went; போயிற்று, it went; ஆயினேன், I became; ஆயிற்று, it became; ஆயிற்று, it became;

But the common people say,

For போயிற்று, போச்சு or போச்சுது, it went.

,, ஆயிற்று, ஆச்சு or ஆச்சுது, *it became*.

" பேசிற்று, பேசிச்சு, it spoke, &c.

(4.) Roots ending in ண் and ள, and forming the present tense with கீற, receive the middle particle ட்: and ன is changed into ண், as:

உண்கேறேன், I eat, உண்டேன், I ate. ஆளுக்றேன், I rule, ஆண்டேன், I ruled, &c.

Exceptions are:

அருளுக்றேன், I grant, அருளினேன், I granted. கேட்கிறேன், from the root கேள், I hear, கேட்டேன், I heard. காண்கிறேன், I see, கண்டேன், I saw.

(5.) Roots ending in $\vec{\omega}$, $\vec{\omega}$, $\vec{\omega}$, $\vec{\omega}$, and forming the present tense with $\vec{\omega}$, receive the middle particle $\dot{\vec{\omega}}$: and $\vec{\omega}$ and $\vec{\omega}$, are changed into $\vec{\omega}$, as:

தீன்கீறேன், I eat, தீன்றேன், I ate.

நீற்கீறேன், from a lastand, நீன்றேன், I stood.

செல்லுக்றேன், I go on, சென்றேன், I went on, &c.

(6.) Roots ending in w, ®, 馬, 數, 西 and w, and forming the present tense with 如, receive the middle particle 由身 and 西 and w, drop the 2, as:

மேய்கீறேன், I feed, ஈகீறேன், I give, வளருகீறேன், I grow,

மேய்க்தேன், I fed. ஈக்தேன், I gave. வளர்க்தேன், I grew.

வாழுக்றேன், I prosper, வாழ்ந்தேன், I prospered, &c.

There are many exceptions to this rule.

Note. The vulgar sometimes change \$\$ to \$\$\$, thus:

For அறிக்கேன், they say அறிஞ்சேன், I knew.

For அடைந்தேன், "அடைஞ்சேன், I got.

(7.) A few roots of only one syllable and forming the present tense with so, have different forms of the past tense, as:

ஆக்றேன், I become, has ஆயினேன் and ஆனேன்.

போக்றேன், I go, " போயினேன் and போ**னேன்.**

சாக்றேன், I die, " செத்தேன்.

வேக்றேன், I burn, ,, வெக்தேன்.

கோக்றேன், I am in pain, ,, கொக்தேன்.

The characteristic middle particle of the past tense being known, the conjugation goes on as in the present tense.

கடந்தேன், கடந்தாய், கடந்தான், கடந்தான், &c.

3. The future tense has only two forms; the characteristic middle particle of the first is iii, which is inserted between the root and the terminations in verbs which form the present tense with &&p, as:

கடக்கீறேன், I walk, கடப்பேன், I shall walk, &c.

The characteristic of the second is வ, which is inserted in verbs forming their present tense with கீழ, as: செய்பேன், I do, செய்வேன், I shall do. அறிமேன், I know, டூட.

Exceptions.

(1.) Roots ending in ண், ன், ன், or ட், receive a single ப், instead of வ், as: காண்க்றேன், I see, காண்பேன், I shall see, &c.

(2.) Roots which end in லு, ல்லு, ளு, ள்ளு, or ழ, may form the future regularly or may drop the உ. One of the double consonants also falls away when the உ is dropped, as:

The terminations of the future tense are like those of the present and past, as: கடப்பேன், கடப்பாய், கடப் பான், டேட் except in the third person neuter, singular and plural. Roots which form the present tense with க்கீற, form the third person neuter future of both numbers, by adding க்கும் to the root. Roots which form the present in கீற, add உம் to the root, for both numbers, thus: கடக்கும், it or they will walk; சொல்லம், it or they will say.

SECTION XXIV.

(G. § 29.)

The ஏவல், i. e. the Imperative Mood, refers to the second person only. The simple root makes the singular; to this உம் is affixed to form an honorific; and to this the plural termination கள் is added to form the plural, as: கீ செய், do thou; கீர் செய்யும், do thou, hon.; கீங்கள் செய்யுங்கள், do you or ye; கீ படி, learn thou; கீர் படியும், learn thou, hon.; கீங்கள் படியுங்கள், learn you or ye, தேட

SECTION XXV.

(G. § 30.)

The வியங்கோள், optative mood, has various forms.

1. & added to the root. This one termination serves for all genders, numbers and persons, as:

கான், நாம், கீ, கீர், கீங்கள், அவன், இவர்கள், அவள், இவர்கள், அது, அவை,

Note. This first form is not in common use.

- 2. The second form is the future tense throughout, with ஆக, the infinitive of ஆக்றது, affixed, as: கான் கடப் பேதை, may I walk; கீ நடப்பாயாக, mayst thou walk, &c.
- 3. The third form is the infinitive mood with the defective verb கடவேன், as: நான் நடக்கக்கடவேன், may I walk; நீ நடக்கக்கடவாய், mayst thou walk, &c.
- 4. There is an optative form common among the people made by adding ஒட்டும், from ஒட்டுக்றது, to an infinitive, thus: அவன் வரவொட்டும், let him come. They further contract this by rejecting the ஒ, as: அவன்வரட்டும்; அவன் இருக்கட்டும், let him be; அவன் போகட்டும், let him go.

SECTION XXVI.

(G. § 31.)

The offsh, defect, comprehends all the indefinite moods of the verb, called participles, gerunds, infinitives, subjunctives, &c. It is divided into two classes

1. GumGut ##. They are participles which comprehend the relative pronoun. We shall therefore call them relative participles. They are always prefixed to some noun. They are three in number and are formed by dropping the personal termination of each tense, and adding s, excepting the future, the third person neuter of which is also the participle future, thus:

Pres. கடக்றேன், I walk, கடக்கிற, who or which walks.
Past கடக்தேன், I walked, கடந்த, who or which walked.
Fut. கடக்கும், it will walk, கடக்கும், who or which will walk.

The relative pronoun "who," or "which," is contained in the participle, there being no separate relative pronoun in Tamil.

Note. Past relative participles of verbs which make the past tense in \mathfrak{DCoor} , sometimes substitute ω , for their final letter \mathfrak{so} , thus:

Past Rel. Part.

- ் பண்ண்டேனன், I made, { பண்ண்ன or } who or which பண்ணிய, } made.
- 2. Samuel Gude in the second class of indefinite moods. They refer to verbs only. There are five of them.
- . (1.) The first indefinite mood or verbal participle, is formed from the past tense, and ends in 2 or 2.

Verbs which have இனேன், in the past tense drop னேன், as: அடக்கினேன், I inclosed, அடக்கீ, inclosing, or having inclosed; சொல்லினேன், I said, சொல்லி, saying, or having said, டூட; but போயினேன், I went,

has only போய், going or having gone; and ஆயினேன், I became, has ஆய், becoming, or having become.

All other verbs drop the personal termination of the past tense, and add உ, as: படித்தேன், I learned, படித்து, learning, or having learned; கடக்குன், I walked, கடந்து, walking, or having walked, &c.

- (2.) The second indefinite mood ends in ஆல், இல், or இன், and answers to the English subjunctive mood with if. The first and common form is made from the past tense by dropping the personal termination, and adding ஆல், as: கடக்கேன், கடக்தால், if I, thou, &c. walk, walked, or shall walk; படித்தேன், படித்தால், if I, thou, &c. learn, learned, or shall learn, &c. The second form is made by adding இல், or இன் to the roots of verbs, which form the present tense with கீலு. But those which form the present with கீகிலு, insert க்க் before the இல் and இன், as: சொல்லு, சொல்லில், or சொல்லின், if I say; கட, கடக்கீல், if I walk; படி, படிக்கீல், or படிக்கீன், if I learn, &c.
- (3.) The third indefinite mood is formed from the first by adding உம். It corresponds to our subjunctive, with although, referring to the past time, thus: சொல்லி, சொல்லியும், although I said; கடந்து, கடந்தும், although I walked.
- (4.) The fourth indefinite mood is formed from the second by adding உம். It answers to our subjunctive, with although, referring to the future time, as: கடக் தால், கடந்தாலும், although I should walk. The action is only supposititious.
 - (5.) The fifth indefinite mood is formed by adding

அ to the root. This answers to our infinitive mood. Thus: பெற, பெற, to receive; அழ, அழ, to weep; அநி, அறிய, to know; செய், செய்ய, to do; சா, சாவ, to die, டூட. Verbs forming the present tense with க்கிற, insert க்க before the அ, as: நட, நடக்க, to walk; இநி, இநிக்க, டூடி.

BECTION XXVII.

(G. § 32.)

The தொழ்ற்பேயர், verbal noun, is formed from the roots and the relative participles.

1. From the roots. Neuter verbal nouns are formed by adding அல், தல், or கை to the roots of verbs which form the present tense with £ஐ, as: from அடங்கு; அடங்கல், அடங்குதல், அடங்குகை, a submitting; from ஆ or ஆத; ஆதல், or ஆததல், ஆககை, a becoming; from செய்; செய்யல், செய்தல், செய்கை, a doing, &c. But the roots of verbs that form their present tense with க்கீஐ, take க்கல், த்தல், க்குதல், or க்கை, thus:

From நட; நடக்கல், நடத்தல், நடக்குதல், நடக்கை, a walking.

From படு; படுக்கல், படுத்தல், படுக்குதல், படுக்கை, a lying down.

Some roots of the latter class are formed into verbal nouns by adding ப்பு, others by மை, others by வ, or வ, thus: from படி; படிப்பு, a learning; பொறு; பொறு மை, a being patient, patience; அடி; அடிவ, a destroying, destruction; பிற; பிறவ, a being born, birth.

^{*} The final 2 of roots gives way, even when the root contains only two short syllables. See Sec. viz. 1.

2. From the relative participles. Personal and neuter verbal nouns are formed by adding அன், அள், த, in the singular, and அர், வை, and ன, in the plural, to the present and past participles, thus:

```
Pres. Part. நடக்கிற,
நடக்கிறவன், he who walks,
நடக்கிறவள், she who walks,
நடக்கிறது, it which walks,
நடக்கிறவர்
ர வர்கள்,
நடக்கிறவை
ர வைகள்,
நடக்கிறவை
ர வைகள்,
நடக்கிறனை
ர வைகள்,
நடக்கிறனை
ர வைகள்,
```

It will be remembered that the future relative participles deviate from the general rule, (See Sec. xxvi. 1,) thus: கடக்கும் instead of கடப்ப; செய்யும், instead of செய்வ. But the future verbal nouns are made on the supposition that the future relative participles are formed according to the rule by which the present and past relative participles are formed, thus:

Singular.	Plural.
ஈடப்பவன், he who will walk, நடப்பவள், she who will walk,	∫ நடப்பவர்
	(ஈடப்பவை or வைகள்
கடப்பது, it which will walk,	or வൈகள்
	் நடப்பன.

But all verbs whose future characteristic is &, for euphony's sake, change that & to \(\docume{\pi}\) whenever it is followed by another \(\docume{\pi}\).

In the neuter verbal noun of the singular and the second form of the neuter verbal noun of the plural, there is no such change because only one & occurs.

Thus, as the fut. rel. part. of செய்கிறது is supposed to be செய்வ, instead of செய்யும், we have,

Singular.

Plural.

செய்பவன், he who will do, செய்பவர் or வர்கள். செய்பவள், she who will do, · செய்பவை. செய்வது, it which will do, செய்வன.

Verbal nouns are also formed by adding மை to the present or past participles, as: கடக்கீன்றமை, a walking; கடந்தமை, a having walked, &c.

All the verbal nouns are regularly declined.

Note 1. The third person masculine and feminine singular and plural of all the tenses is sometimes used as a verbal noun, thus:

கடக்கின்றுன், is the same as கடக்கிறவன். கடந்தாள், ,, ,, ,, ,, கடந்தவள். கடப்பார், ,, ,, ,, ,, கடப்பவர். கடப்பார்கள், ,, ,, ,, ,, கடப்பவர்கள்.

Note 2. Sometimes verbal nouns, especially in the past tense, change the final அவன், அவள், and அவர் into ஒன், ஒள், and ஒர், thus:

நடந்தோன், for நடந்தவன். செய்தோள், for செய்தவள். மீட்டோர், for மீட்டவர்.

SECTION XXVIII.

(G. § 33.)

The எதிர்மறைமொழி, negative of a verb, has several forms.

1. The first form is made by adding the regular terminations $\sigma \dot{\omega}$, &c. to the simple root; excepting the third person neuter of the singular which ends in &s, and the third person neuter of the plural which ends in &.

This form has but one tense; it refers chiefly to future time. But it includes also the present and past, and may be used without reference to any specific time, to designate nature, or habit.

Singular.

நான் நடவேன், I shall not, or I use not to walk. நீ நடவாய், thou wilt not, or thou usest not to walk, &c. அது நடவாது, it will not, or it uses not to walk.

Plural.

காம் கடவோம், we shall not, or we use not to walk, &c. அவை கடவா, they will not, or they use not to walk.

2. A negative verb may be formed in each tense by joining the three affirmative tenses of the verb Dodspy to the negative verbal participle of any verb, as:

3. A negative verb may be formed by adding some to the infinitive mood of the affirmative verb. This negative refers chiefly to the past time, as:

கான், கீ, அவன், டூட கடக்கவில்வல, I, thou, he, டூட did not walk.

4. A negative verb may be formed by adding இல்லை to the singular neuter verbal noun of the present tense. It stands for all the three tenses and may be used with any person and number, as: கான், கீ, அவர்கள், டே. செய் கிறதீல்லை, I, thou, they, டூட do not, did not, will not do.

தல்லை is also added to the singular neuter verbal nouns of the past and future tenses, and is used with all persons, and genders, both singular and plural.

கான் கடந்ததீல்லை, I did not walk. கீ கடந்ததீல்லை, thou didst not walk. அவன் கடந்ததீல்லை, he did not walk. &c. &c. &c.

காம் நடப்பதில்வை, we will not walk. கீங்கள் நடப்பதில்வல, you will not walk. அவர்கள் நடப்பதில்வல, they will not walk.

&c. &c. &c.

5. The imperative (ఖాటస్) of the negative verb is made by adding the affirmative imperative of இருக்கிறது

to the negative verbal participle of any verb, as: கீ கட வாத்கு, do thou not walk; கீர் கடவாத்கும், do thou not walk, (hon.); கீங்கள் கடவாத்குங்கள், do ye not walk.

It is still more common to say,

கீ கடவாதே or தை, do thou not walk. கீர் கடவாதேயும் or தையும், do thou not walk, (hon.) கீங்கள் கடவாதேயுங்கள் or தையுங்கள்,

- 6. The optative form (லியங்கோள்) of the negative verb is made by adding the affirmative optative of இருக்கிறது to the negative verbal participle, as: கான் லிழா தருப்பேணுக, may I not fall; கீ லிழாதிருப்பாயாக, mayet thou not fall, &c.
- 7. The indefinite moods of the negative verb are formed thus:
- (1.) The negative பெயரேச்சம். This first class of indefinite moods, or *relative participle*, is made by adding ஆத to the root, as:

Pres. நடவாத்ருக்கிற, who or which does not walk.
Past நடவாத்ருந்த, who or which has not walked.
Fut. நடவாத்ருக்கும், who or which will not walk.

(2.) The negative விணயேச்சம். Of this second

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

class of indefinite moods, the first indefinite mood or verbal participle is formed by adding ஆது, or ஆமல் to the root, as: கடவாது, or கடவாமல், not walking; பேசாது, or பேசாமல், not speaking, &c.

The remaining indefinite moods are formed by adding the affirmative indefinite moods of Dyskops to the negative verbal participle of any verb, as:

Note. The neg. rel. part., and the neg. verb. part. which ends in \mathcal{B}_i , sometimes drop their last letter, thus:

- 8. Negative verbal nouns, (தொழ்ற்பெயர்) are formed (1.) by adding ஆமை to the root, as: கடவாமை, a not walking; செய்யாமை, a not doing, &c.
- (2.) By adding the terminations mentioned in Sec. xxvii. 2, to the negative relative participle, thus: கடவா தவன், he who does not walk; கடவாதவன், she who does not walk; கடவாதவ், she who does not walk, &c. ..

PARADIGM I.

A verb forming the present tense with &&p.

PRESENT.

Singular.

கான் படிக்கீறுன், or படிக்கீன்றேன், I learn.

கீ படிக்கீருய், or படிக்கீன்றுய், thou learnest.

கீர் படிக்கீரீர், or படிக்கீன்றீர், thou learnest, (hon.)

அவன் படிக்கீருன், or படிக்கீன்றீன், he learns.

அவர் படிக்கீருர், or படிக்கீன்றீர், he learns, (hon.)

அவள் படிக்கீருள், or படிக்கீன்றூள், she learns.

அது படிக்கீறது, or படிக்கீன்றது, it learns.

Plural.

காம் படிக்கீரேம், or படிக்கீன்ரூம், we learn. கீங்கள் படிக்கீரீர்கள், or படிக்கீன்ரீர்கள், ye learn. அவர்கள் படிக்கீறுர்கள், or படிக்கீன்றுர்கள், அவைகள் படிக்கீன்றன, they learn, (n.)

PAST.

Singular.

கான் படித்தேன், I learned. கீ படித்தாய், thou learnedst. கீர் படித்தீர், thou learnedst, (hon.) அவன் படித்தான், he learned. அவர் படித்தார், he learned, (hon.) அவள் படித்தாள், she learned. அது படித்தது, it learned.

Plural.

காம் படித்தோம், we learned. கீங்கள் படித்தீர்கள், ye learned. அவர்கள் படித்தார்கள், they learned, (m. & f.) அவைகள் படித்தன, they learned, (n.)

FUTURE.

Singular.

கான் படிப்பேன், I will learn. கீ படிப்பாய், thou wilt learn. கீர் படிப்பீர், thou wilt learn, (hon.) அவன் படிப்பான், he will learn. அவர் படிப்பார், he will learn, (hon.) அவர் படிப்பாள், she will learn. அது படிக்கும், it will learn.

Plural.

காம் படிப்போம், we will learn. கீங்கள் படிப்பீர்கள், you will learn. அவர்கள் படிப்பார்கள், they will learn, (m. & f.) அவைகள் படிக்கும், they will learn, (n.)

IMPERATIVE.

கீ படி, learn thou. கீர் படியும், learn thou, (hon.) கீங்கள் படியுங்கள், learn ye.

OPTATIVE. First form.

நான், நாம், நீ, நீர், நீங்கள், அவன், அவள், அவள், அது, அவை,

Second form.

கான் படிப்பேணுக், may I learn.
கீ படிப்பாயாக், mayst thou learn.
கீர் படிப்பீராக், mayst thou learn, (hon.)
அவன் படிப்பானுக், may he learn.
அவர் படிப்பாளாக், may he learn, (hon.)
அவள் படிப்பாளாக், may she learn.
அது படிப்பராக், may it learn.
காம் படிப்போமாக், may we learn.
கீங்கள் படிப்பீர்களாக், may ye learn.
அவர்கள் படிப்பீர்களாக், may they learn, (m. & f.)

Third form.

நான் படிக்கக்கடவேன், may I learn. நீ படிக்கக்கடவாய், mayst thou learn. நீர் படிக்கக்கடவீர், mayst thou learn, (hon.) அவன் படிக்கக்கடவான் or கடவன், may he learn. அவர் படிக்கக்கடவார் or கடவர்,

^{*}Note. &, being inserted in this, and some similar cases, makes the first form of the optative to appear sometimes like the infinitive.

```
அவள் படிக்கக்கட்வாள் or கடவள், may she learn.
அது படிக்கக்கடவது, may it learn.
நாம் படிக்கக்கடவோம், may we learn.
கீங்கள் படிக்கக்கடவீர்கள், may ye learn.
அவர்கள் படிக்கக்கடவார்
கள் or கடவர்கள்,
அவை படிக்கக்கடவன, may they learn, (n.)
```

Fourth form.

கான், காம், நீ, நீர், நீங்கள், அவன், அவள், இவர்கள், அவள், அது, அவை,

1st class of indefinite moods, or relative PARTICIPLES.

படிக்கீற, who or which learns. ் படித்த, who or which learned. படிக்கும், who or which will learn.

2d class of indefinite moods.

The 1st Indefinite mood } or verbal participle, } learning or (having learned. 2d Ind. mood, படிக்கால், படிக் learn, learned, கீல், படிக்கின், or shall learn. 3d Ind. mood, படித்தும், { although I, thou, &c. learned.

4th Ind. mood, படித்தாலும், { although I, &c. should learn. 5th or Infinitive, படிக்க, to learn.

VERBAL NOUNS.

1st. Abstract verbals formed from the Root.

படித்தல், a learning. படிக்குதல், a learning. படிக்கை, a learning. படிப்பு, a learning.

2d. Personal and neuter verbals formed from the Relative Participles.

Present.

படிக்கீறவன், he who learns. படிக்கீறது, that which learns. படிக்கீறது, that which learns. படிக்கீறவர் or வர்கள், they who learn. படிக்கீறவை, or படிக்கீன்றவை: or வைகள், படிக்கீன்றன,

Past.

படித்தவன், he who learned. படித்தவள், she who learned. படித்தது, that which learned. படித்தவர் or வர்கள், they who learned. படித்தவை or வைகள்,) படித்தவை,

Future.

படிப்பவன், he who will learn. படிப்பவள், she who will learn. படிப்பது, that which will learn. படிப்பவர் or வர்கள், they who will learn. படிப்பவை or வைகள், they which will learn. படிப்பன,

Abstract verbals formed from the Relative Participles. படிக்கின்றமை, a learning. படித்தமை, a having learned.

PARADIGM II.

A verb forming the present tense with sg.

PRESENT.

Singular.

நான் பண்ணுக்றேன், or பண்ணுக்ன்றேன், I make. நீ பண்ணுக்குய், or பண்ணுக்ன்குய், thou makest. நீர் பண்ணுக்றீர், or பண்ணுக்ன்றீர், thou makest, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணுக்குன், or பண்ணுக்ன்குன், he makes. அவர் பண்ணுக்குர், or பண்ணுக்ன்குர், he makes, (hon.) அவள் பண்ணுக்குள், or பண்ணுக்ன்குள், she makes. அது பண்ணுக்குது, or பண்ணுக்ன்றது, it makes.

Plural.

நாம் பண்ணுக்கும், or பண்ணுக்ன்கும், we make. நீங்கள் பண்ணுக்றீர்கள், or பண்ணுக்ன்றீர்கள், you make. அவர்கள் பண்ணுக்குர்கள், or பண்ணுக்ன்ரூர்கள், they make, (m. & f.) அவைகள் பண்ணுக்ன்றன, they make, (n.)

PAST.

Singular.

கான் பண்ணினேன், I made. கீ பண்ணிஞய், thou madest. கீர் பண்ணினீர், thou madest, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணிஞன், he made. அவர் பண்ணிஞர், he made, (hon.) அவள் பண்ணிஞர், she made. அது பண்ணிற்று, பண்ணிச்சு, (vulgar)

Plural.

நாம் பண்ணி ேஞம், we made. நீங்கள் பண்ண வீர்கள், you made. அவர்கள் பண்ண ஞர்கள், they made, (m. & f.) அவைகள் பண்ணன் ஏ, they made, (n.)

FUTURE.

Singular.

கான் பண்ணுவேன், I will make. கீ பண்ணுவாய், thou wilt make. கீர் பண்ணுவர், thou wilt make, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணுவான், he will make. அவர் பண்ணுவார், he will make, (hon.) அவள் பண்ணுவாள், she will make. அது பண்ணும், it will make.

Plural.

காம் பண்ணுவோம், ve will make. கீங்கள் பண்ணுவீர்கள், you will make. அவர்கள் பண்ணுவார்கள், they will make, (m. & f.) அவைகள் பண்ணும், they will make, (n.)

IMPERATIVE.

ரீ பண்ணு, make thou. கீர் பண்ணும், make thou, (hon.) கீங்கள் பண்ணுங்கள், make ye.

OPTATIVE.

First form.

கான், நாம், கீ, கீர், கீங்கள், அவன், இவர்கள், அவள், இவர்கள், இவள், இவர்கள்,

Second form.

கான் பண்ணுவேகை, may I make. கீ பண்ணுவாயாக, mayest thou make. கீர் பண்ணுவீராக, mayest thou make, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணுவாகுக, may he make. அவர் பண்ணுவாராக, may he make, (hon.) அவள் பண்ணுவாளாக, may she make. அது பண்ணுவதாக, may it make. காம் பண்ணுவோமாக, may we make. கீங்கள் பண்ணுவீர்களாக, may you make. அவர்கள் பண்ணுவார்களாக, may they make, (m.&f.) அவைகள் பண்ணுவனவாக, may they make, (n.)

Third form.

கான் பண்ணக்கடவேன், may I make.Google

கீ பண்ணக்கடவாய், mayest thou make.

```
ரீர் பண்ணக்கடவீர், mayest thou make, (hon.)
அவன் பண்ணக்கடவான் ) may he make.
அவர் பண்ணக்கடவார் 
or கடவர், } may he make, (hon.)
அவள் பண்ணக்கடவாள் and may she make.
அது பண்ணக்கடவது, may it make.
நாம் பண்ணக்கடவோம், may we make.
நீங்கள் பண்ணக்கடவீர்கள், may you make.
அவர்கள் பண்ணக்கடவார்கள் \ may they make,
               or கடவர்கள், (m. & f.)
அவைகள் பண்ணக்கடவன, may they make, (n.)
              Fourth form.
கான், காம்,
கீ, கீர், கீங்கள்,
அவன், இவர்கள்,
அவள், இவர்கள்,
```

1st CLASS OF INDEFINITE MOODS, OR RELATIVE PARTICIPLES.

பண்ணுக்ற, who or which makes. பண்ணின், who or which made. பண்ணும், who or which will make.

அது, அவை,

2d class of indefinite moods.

The 1st Indefinite mood \ 11000 000f, making or havor verbal participle. ing made ogle

2d Ind. (பண்ணி குல், பண் } if I, thou, &c. make, mood, கனில், பண்ணின், ' made, or shall make.
3d Ind. mood, பண்ணியும், { although I, thou, &c. made.

4th Ind. mood, பண்ண் ஒலும், { although I, &c. should make. 5th or Infinitive, பண்ண, to make.

VERBAL NOUNS.

1st. Abstract verbals formed from the Root.

பண்ணல், a making. பண்ணுதல், a making. பண்ணுகை, a making.

2d. Personal and neuter verbals formed from the Relative Participles.

Present.

பண்ணுக்றவன், he who makes. பண்ணுக்றவள், she who makes. பண்ணுக்றது, that which makes. பண்ணுக்றவர் or வர்கள், they who make. பண்ணுக்றவை, or பண்ணுக்ன்ற வை or வைகள்,பண்ணுக்ன்றன்,

Past.

பண்ணினவன், he who made. பண்ணினவள், she who made. பண்ணினது, that which made. பண்ணினவர் or வர்கள், they who made. பண்ணினவை or வைகள், they which made.

Future.

பண்ணுபவன், he who will make. பண்ணுபவள், she who will make. பன்ணுவது, that which will make. பண்ணுபவர் or வர்கள், they who will make. பண்ணுபவை or வைகள், they which will make.

Abstract verbals formed from the Relative Participles. பண்ணுக்ன்றமை, a making.

பண்ணினமை, a having made.

NEGATIVE OF THE VERB OF PARADIGM I.

 A TENSE FOR FUTURE TIME, OR COMMON FOR ALL TIMES.

Singular.

கான் படியேன், I will not, or use not to learn.

கீ படியாய், thou wilt not, or usest not to learn.
கீர் படியீர், thou wilt not, or usest not to learn, (hon.)
அவன் படியான், he will not, or uses not to learn.
அவர் படியாள், she will not, or uses not to learn.
அது படியான், she will not, or uses not to learn.
அது படியான், we will not, or use not to learn.
கங்கள் படியோம், we will not, or use not to learn.
கீங்கள் படியீர்கள், ye will not, or use not to learn.
அவர்கள் படியார்கள்,

(they will not, or use not to learn, (m. & f.)

2. THE NEGATIVE VERB FORMED IN EACH TENSE. கான் படியாதிருக்கீறேன், I do not learn.
or படியாமலிருக்கீறேன்,
கீ படியாதிருக்கீறுய், or படியாமலிருக்கீறுய்,
&c. &c. &c.
கான் படியாதிருக்தேன்,
or படியாமலிருக்தேன்,
கீ படியாதிருக்தாய், or thou didst not uடியாமலிருக்தாய்,
படியாமலிருக்தாய், Past &c. கான் படியாதீருப்பேன், or படியாமலிருப்பேன், if will not learn.
கீ படியாதிருப்பாய், or படியாமலிருப்பாய், &c.

3. A NEGATIVE REFERRING TO THE PAST TIME.

&c.

நான், நீ, அவன், அவள், அவள், அது, நாம், நீங்கள், வல, வல, வல, வல, வல, did not learn.

4. A TENSE COMMON TO ALL TIMES.

SPECIFICALLY FOR PAST AND PRESENT TIME. கான், கீ, &c. படித்ததில்லை, I, thou, &c. did not learn. கான், கீ, &c. படிப்பதீல்வல, I, thou, &c. will not learn.

IMPERATIVE.

கீ படியாத்கு or படியாதே, do thou not learn. கீர் படியாத்கும், or do thou not learn, (hon.) படியாதேயும், do ye not learn. or படியாதிகுங்கள், do ye not learn.

OPTATIVE.

கான் படியாதீருப்பேணுக, may I not learn.
கீ படியாதீருப்பாயாக, mayst thou not learn.
கீர் படியாதீருப்போக, mayst thou not learn, (hon.)
அவன் படியாதீருப்பாணுக, may he not learn.
அவர் படியாதீருப்பாராக, may he not learn, (hon.)
அவள் படியாதீருப்பாளாக, may she not learn.
அது படியாதீருப்பாளாக, may it not learn.
காம் படியாதீருப்பராக, may we not learn.
கீங்கள் படியாதீருப்பீர்களாக, may you not learn.
அவர்கள் படியாதீருப்பீர்களாக, (may they not learn, அவர்கள் படியாதீருப்பார்களாக, (may they not learn, அவர்கள் படியாதீருப்பனவாக, may they not learn, (n.)

1st CLASS OF INDEFINITE MOODS OR RELATIVE PARTICIPLES.

For any tense.

படியாத, who or which does not, did not, will not learn.
For each tense.

படியாதீருக்கீற, who or which does not learn. படியாதீருந்த, who or which did not learn. படியாதீருக்கும், who or which will not learn!

2d CLASS OF INDEFINITE MOODS.

1st Ind.m.or படியாது, or Verb. part. படியாது, or learning.
2d Ind. படியாதிருந்தால், if I, thou, &c. do not mood, படியாதிருந்தும், although I, &c. do, or mood, படியாதிருந்தாலும், although I, &c. mood, படியாதிருந்தாலும், should not learn.
5th or Inf. படியாதிருக்க, not to learn.

NEGATIVE VERBAL NOUNS.

- 1. Abstract verbal formed from the Root. படியாமை, a not learning.
- Personal and neuter verbals formed from the Relative Participle.
- படியாதவன், he who does not learn.
 படியாதவள், she who does not learn.
 படியாதது, that which does not learn.
 படியாதவர் or வர்கள், they who do not learn.
 படியாதவை or வைகள்,
 } they which do not learn.

NEGATIVE OF THE VERB OF PARADIGM II.

I. A TENSE FOR FUTURE TIME OR COMMON FOR ALL TIMES.

Singular. கான் பண்ணேன். I will not, or use not to make.

கீ பண்ணுய், thou wilt not, or usest not to make. கீர் பண்ணன்ர், { thou wilt not, or usest not to make, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணுன், he will not, or uses not to make. அவர் பண்ணர், { he will not, or uses not to make, (hon.) அவள் பண்ணள், she will not, or uses not to make. அது பண்ணது, it will not, or uses not to make.

Pheal

காம் பண்ணேம், we will not, or use not to make. கீங்கள் பண்ணிர்கள், \ ye will not, or use not to make. அவர்கள் பண்ணூர்கள், { they will not, or use not to make, (m. & f.) அவை பண்ண, they will not, or use not to make, (n.)

2. THE NEGATIVE VERB FORMED IN EACH TENSE.

Past

| Past | Or பண்ணுத்குக்குக்க, | I did not make. |
| Past | Or பண்ணும்லிருக்கோய், Or பண்ணும்லிருக்தாய், Or பண்ணும்லிருக்தாய், | Make. |
| Co. &c. &c. &c. |
| Future | Tump | Archive | Archi

3. A NEGATIVE REFERRING TO THE PAST TIME.

கான், கீ, அவன், &c. $\left. \left. \right\}$ I, thou, he, &c. did not make.

4. A TENSE COMMON TO ALL TIMES.

நான், கீ, டே. பண் } I, thou, &c. do not, did not, ணுக்றத்ல்வை, will not make.

SPECIFICALLY FOR PAST AND PRESENT TIME.

கான், கீ, டே. பண் கான், கீ, டே. பண் ஹூவதீல்வை, } I, thou, &c. did not make.

IMPERATIVE.

கீ பண்ணதீர், or பண்ணதே, கீர் பண்ணதீரும், or பண்ணதேயும், கீங்கள் பண்ணதீருங்கள், do ye not make. or பண்ணதேயுங்கள்,

OPTATIVE.

கான் பண்ணுத்ருப்பே⊚க, may I not make. கீ பண்ணுத்ருப்பாயாக, mayst thou not make. கீர் பண்ணுத்ருப்பீராக, mayst thou not make, (hon.) அவன் பண்ணுத்ருப்பா⊚க, may he not make. &c. &c. &c.

1st CLASS OF INDEFINITE MOODS OR RELATIVE PARTICIPLES.

For all tenses.

பண்ணத், { who or which does not, did not, will not make.

For each tense.

பண்ணத்ருக்கிற, who or which does not make. பண்ணதிருந்த, who or which did not make. பண்ணதிருக்கும், who or which will not make.

2d class of indefinite moods.

Ist Ind. m. or பண்ணது, or Verb. part. பண்ணது, or பண்ணதும், fif I, thou, &c. do mood, பண்ணதீருந்தால், fif I, thou, &c. do not make.

3d Ind. பண்ணதீருந்தும், although I, &c. do, or did not make.

4th Ind. பண்ணதீருந்தாலும், although I, &c. should not make.

5th or Infinitive, பண்ணதீருக்க, not to make.

NEGATIVE VERBAL NOUNS.

1. Abstract verbal formed from the root.

பண்ணமை. a not making.

2. Personal and neuter verbals formed from the Relative Participles.

பண்ணதவன், he who does not make. பண்ணதவள், she who does not make. பண்ணத்த, that which does not make. பண்ணதவர் or வர்கள், they who do not make. பண்ணுதவை or வைகள், ? they which do not make. பண்ணுதன்,

SECTION XXIX.

(G. & 34.)

Causal Verbe.

Rule. Causal verbs may be formed by dropping the personal termination of the future tense, and adding இக்கீறது, thus:

Causal.

படிக்கீறேன், I learn, படிப்பீக்கீறேன், I cause to learn, Fut. படிப்பேன், or teach. செய்கீறேன், I do, G செய்விக்கீறேன், I cause to do. காண்க்றேன், I see,) காண்பிக்கிறேன், I cause to see or Fut. காண்பேன், \ I show. Digitized by Google C

These causal verbs are regularly conjugated, thus: Present, நான் படிப்பிக்கேறேன், I teach, &c. Past, நான் படிப்பித்தேன், I taught, &c. Future. நான் படிப்பிப்பேன், I shall teach, &c.

SECTION XXX.

(G. § 35.)

There are several defective verbs of which only some parts are in use; these are

1. Of the root, so, equal or agreeing.

The 3d pers. neut. fut. ஒக்கும், it agrees, it is equal. The pres. rel. part. ஒக்கின்ற, who or which is equal. The past. rel. part. ஒக்கும், who or which was equal. The fut. rel. part. ஒக்கும், who or which will agree. The verb. part. ஒக்கு, agreeing, being equal. The inf. mood, ஒவ்வ, ஒப்ப, to agree.

The verbal nouns, { ஒத்தது, that which agrees. and ஒப்பு, agreement, equality.

Neg. 3d pers. neut. sing. ஒவ்வரது, it does not agree.

Neg. rel. part. அவ்வாத, who or which does not, did not, will not agree.

Neg. verbal part. $\left\{ egin{array}{ll} <table-cell> & \phi & all &$

Occasionally, however, we meet also with the three tenses, as:

ஷக்கீன்றேன், I agree. ஷத்தேன், I agreed. ஒப்பேன், I shall agree.

2. Of the root, Causin & necessity.

The 3d pers. neut. } Coucoo Gio, it is necessary, it must.

The past. rel. part. வேண்டிய, { who or which was, or is necessary.

The verbal nouns, { Cவண்டியது, { that which was or is necessary. { that which will be necessary. { that which will be necessary. }

In the negative form, வேண்டாம், it must not.

Note. For வேண்டும், the vulgar use வேணும், and for வேண்டாம், வாண்டாம், or வாணம். This defective verb must not be confounded with வேண்டுக்றது, to desire, to beq, which is regularly conjugated through all the moods and tenses.

3. Of the root, wnife, possibility, ability, used only in மாட்டேன், I can, or will not.

மாட்டேன், I can, or will not.
மாட்டாய், thou canst, or will not.
மாட்டாய், thou canst, or will not.
மாட்டான், he can, or will not.
மாட்டான், he can, or will not.
மாட்டான், she can, or will not.
மாட்டாது, it can, or will not.
மாட்டோத், we can, or will not.
மாட்டோக், you can, or will not.

மாட்டார்கள், they can, or will not. The relative participle,

β ωπίμπφ, who or which is not able.

The verbal par- { மாட்டாத, ticiple. } மாட்டாதல். } not being able.

4. Of the negative verbal roots, இல் and அல் signi-

fying not. So denies the existence, and so the quality of a thing.

இல்லேன், அல்லேன், I am not. இல்லாய், அல்லாய், thou art not. இல்லான், அல்லான், he is not. இல்லத, அல்லாத, it is not. Plural,

இல்லோம், அல்லோம், we are not.
இல்லீர்கள், அல்லீர்கள், you are not.
இல்லார்கள்,அல்லார்கள்,they are not, (m.)
இல்லன, அல்லன, they are not, (n.) இல்லன, அல்லன, they are not, (n.)

Rel. part.

இல்லாத,* அல்லாத,* who or which is not.

Perbal part.

இல்லாத்,* அல்லாத,* not being.
இல்லாமல்,*அல்லாமல்,* not being.
இல்லாமை,*அல்லாமை,* a not being.
இல்லாமை,*அல்லாமை,* a not being.
இல்லை,* அல்லாதமன்,* he who is not.
இல்லாதவன்,* அல்லாதவன்,* he who is not.
இல்லாதவன்,* அல்லாதவன்,* she who is not.
இல்லாததன்,* அல்லாததன்,* she who is not.

Note. Those marked with an asterisk [*] are in com-

5. Of soin, the opposite of Sid, affirming existence. Third pers. for all genders, soin G, there is.

Rel. part. soin so, who or which is or was.

Verbal nouns, 2 உண்மை, a being; truth. உள்ளவன், ke who is. உள்ளவள், she who is. உள்ளது, that which is.

6. Of Сипы, denoting sufficiency.
3d pers. neut. fut. Сипый, it is enough, sufficient.

```
Neg. 3d pers. neut. sing. Currang, it is not enough.
                         போதாத, { who or which is not enough.
Neg. rel. part.
                          போதாமை, } a not being enough.
Neg. verbal noun,
  7. Of the root at, denoting necessity, duty, the whole
of the future tense, thus:
       கடவேன், I must, or may.
       கடவாய், thou must, or manest.
       கடவீர், thou must, or mayest, (hon.)
      கடவான், or } he must, or may.
       கடவார், or } he must, or may, (hon.)
       கடவாள், or a she must, or may.
       கடவது, it must, or may.
       கடவோம், we must, or may.
       கடவீர்கள், you must, or may.
       கடவார்கள், or } they must, or may, (m. & f.)
       கடவன, they must, or may, (neut.)
Verbal noun, கடமை, duty.
  8. Of the root $5, denoting fitness, propriety, the whole
future tense, as:
         ததவேன், I ought, I am fit.
         தகவாய், thou oughtest,
         ததவான், he ought.
         துதுவான், she ought.
         தகும், it ought.
          dec. dec. dec.
```

Past. rel. part. Fut. rel. part. தக்க, who or which was or is fit. தகும், who or which will be fit.

Inf. mood,

தக, to be fit.

Verbal nouns.

தத்தி, தகைமை, { fitness, propriety. தக்கவன், he who is fit. தக்கவள், she who is fit. கக்கது, that which is fit.

Neg. rel. part. Neg. verbal part.

தகாத, who or which is not fit.

Neg. verbal nouns.

(தகாதவன், he who is not fit. | தகாதவள், she who is not fit. | தகாதது, that which is not fit.

SECTION XXXI.

(G. § 36.)

A passive voice is formed in Tamil

- 1. By adding படுக்றேன், I suffer, in all its modifications to the infinitive mood of any transitive verb, thus: அடிக்கப்படுக்றேன், I am beaten; அடிக்கப்பட்டேன், I was beaten; அடிக்கப்படுவேன், I shall be beaten, &c. &c. This is the most common form.
- 2. By adding பெறுகிறது in the same way, thus: அடிக்கப்பெறுகிறேன், I get a beating, i. e. I am beaten. அடிக்கப்பெற்றேன், I got beating, i. e. I was beaten. அடிக்கப்பெறுவேன், I shall get beating, i. e. I shall be beaten.
 - 3. By adding, in some instances, the verb 2 store

ECpoir, *I eat*, figuratively, to primitive verbal nouns, thus:

அறையுண்கேறேன், I eat stripes, i. e. I am beaten. அறையுண்டேன், I ate stripes, i. e. I was beaten. அறையுண்பேன், I shall eat stripes, i. e. I shall be beaten. குட்டுண்கேறேன், I am buffetted.

&c. &c. &c. அறுப்புண்க்றேன், I am cut off.

&c. &c. &c.

Thus: கர்த்தர்சிலுவையிலறையுண்டார், the Lord was crucified.

SECTION XXXII.

(G. § 38.)

Some particulars respecting the derivation or formation of verbs.

VERBS FORMED FROM OTHER VERBS.

- 1. Intransitive verbs are formed into transitive by inserting த்த between the simple root and the characteristic particles கீறு or கீன்று, as: கடக்கீறது, to walk; கடத்துகீறது, to make to walk, to direct; கீடக்கீறது, to lie down; கீடத்துகீறது, to make to lie down, to lay down; படுக்றது, to suffer; படுத்துகீறது, to make to suffer, to affect. In the same way, some verbs already transitive, become doubly so, or become causal, thus: கமக்கீறது, to bear a burden; குமத்துகீறது, to make one carry a burden, to put upon.
 - 2. If the root end in p or G, transitive or causal

verbs are formed by doubling the p and ட், as: ஆற கிறது, to be comforted; ஆற்றுகிறது, to comfort; ஒடுகிறது, to ran; ஒட்டுகிறது, to drive; ஆடுகிறது, to play; ஆட்டுகி றது, to make one play, &c.

- 3. Roots which end in ங்கு, ம்பு, are formed into transitive or causal verbs by changing the is and it, into க் and ப், as: அடங்குகிறது, to be contained; அடக்குகிறது, to make to be contained, to retain; எழும்புகிறது, to rise; எழுப்புகிறது, to raise; தீகும்புகிறது, to return; தீருப்புகிறது, to turn, or make to go back.
- 4. Some intransitive verbs, whose roots end in ப், form transitive or causal verbs by inserting ச்சு, as: பாய்க்றது, to run; பாய்ச்சுக்றது, to make run, (as the water;) காய்க்றது, to become dry; காய்ச்சுக்றது, to make dry.

VERBS FORMED FROM NOUNS.

- 1. Verbs are formed from nouns by adding to them படுக்றத for the intransitive, and படுத்துக்றது for the transitive; if the noun end in ம், ம் is dropt, thus: தண ப்படுக்றது, to become healed; தணப்படுத்துக்றது, to heal; சம்தோஷப்படுக்றது, to become glad; சம்தோஷப்படுத்துக்றது, to make glad.
- 2. Intransitive verbs are formed from nouns of quality, by adding Asps, to become, and Australia, to be, as: Seconds ps, to become healed; Seconds Asps, to be healed, &c. Observe that there is a difference in these forms.
- 3. Transitive verbs are formed by joining the verbs as despon to the noun,

Causal.

ss: தணமாக்குகீறது, to heal; சுத்தஞ்செய்கீறது, or சுத்த ம்பண்ணுகீறது, to cleanse, to make clean; தோத்தீரஞ் செய்கீறது, or தோத்தீரம்பண்ணுகீறது, to praise, &c.

4. Transitive and intransitive verbs are formed of Sanscrit nouns ending in அம், by dropping this syllable, and adding இக்கிறது, as:

தீயானம், meditation; தீயானிக்கீறது, to meditate a thing. வசனம், word; வசனிக்கீறது, to speak a thing. வசனிப்பிக்கீறது, to make வசனிப்பிக்கீறது, to make another speak a thing. போசும், light; போசுக்கீறது, to shine. சம்தோஷம், joy; சம்தோஷம், joy; சம்தோஷிக்கீறது, to be glad.

SECTION XXXIII.

(G. § 39, 40, 41.)

Adjectives and Adverbs.

The fourth part of speech in Tamil is effective, qualifying or descriptive word, referring either to nouns or verbs. In the former case we call them adjectives, in the latter, adverbs.

ADJECTIVES

Are variously formed from nouns denoting quality.

1. By adding the relative participles AGG OF a sirer

to them, as: கீளம், length; கீளமான, கீளமுள்ள, long; இரக்கம், mercy; இரக்கமான, இரக்கமுள்ள, merciful, &c.

They always precede the noun which they qualify, without any change, as: கீளமானகோல், a long stick; இரக்கமுள்ளமனிதன், a merciful man, &c.

- 2. If the nouns denoting quality end in ம், this letter is often dropped and the remainder of the word used adjectively, as: from சுத்தம், purity; சுத்தஇருதயம், a clean heart; தானம், spirituality; ஞானபோசனம், spiritual food; புறம், the outside; புறப்பொருள், an external thing.
- 3. Nouns ending in a vowel, are often used as adjectives without any change, as: மழைக்காலம், the rainy season; பாறைக்லம், a stony ground.
- 4. Some nouns ending in ம்பு, and ந்த, change the ம் and ந், respectively into ப் and த், and become adjectives, as: இரும்பு, iron; இருப்புக்கோல், an iron rod; மருந்து, medicine; மருத்துப்பை, a medicine bag.
 - 5. Some nouns ending in உடை, or இடை, change these syllables into இய, ánd become adjectives, as: கொடுமை, cruelty; கொடியமனசு, a cruel mind; பெருமை, greatness; பெரியமலை, a large mountain; இனிமை, sweetness; இனியசொல், a pleasant word.

In some instances only ஐ is rejected, as: பெருங்கோ பம், great anger; பெருமை in certain connexions, drops its last syllable, and lengthens its first vowel, thus: பே மாசை, great desire.

6. A few words are naturally adjectives, as: பல, various; சில, some; நல், or நல்ல, good; போது common;

புது, new; thus: சிலகனிகள், some fruits; நற்குணம், good disposition, &c.

7. Sometimes relative participles of the past tense are used adjectively, as: கெட்டமாம், a corrupt tree; செத்தமிருகம், a dead beast, &c.

ADVERBS

1. Are naturally such, as:

- 2. Are formed from nouns of quality by affixing the verbal participle ஆய், or the infinitive ஆக of the verb ஆக்றது, as: from கோபம், anger; கோபமாய்வந்தான், he came angrily; நன்று, a good thing; நன்றுகச்சொன்ற ன், he spoke well, &c.
- 3. Some infinitives are used adverbially, as: கூட, to join; அவர்கள் கூடவக்தார்கள், they came together; மீக, to be much; மீகக்கொடுத்தான், he gave much; மெல்ல, to be soft; மெல்லகடக்தான், he walked softly or slowly; ஒருமீக்க, to be joined; ஒரும்பட, to be joined; ஒருப்பட, ரக்ள், together.

The particle உம் is added to some of the above mentioned words, as: மீகவுங்கோபித்தான், he was very angry; சாலவும்பேசினுன், he spoke much.

CHAPTER III.

SYNTAX.

SECTION XXXIV.

(G. § 42.)

The Tamulians do not treat of Syntax specially, but connect the chapter respecting it (Genéralement) with Etymology. They make three principal parts of a sentence, viz. strain or safet, beginning, head, which we call nominative or subject; Genium Gungen, the object; and with conclusion, which expresses the finite verb. The words which depend upon or refer to either of these, are called speak Gungesen.

GENERAL RULES OF ARRANGEMENT.

Both subject and object always precede the finite verb or LINION, and the latter always concludes the sentence, as: All words depending upon the nominative and verb precede them respectively; and these dependent words are placed nearer to, or farther from their principal, according to their relative importance.

The Adjective always precedes the substantive, as: தயையுள்ள சுவாம், gracious God.

The Noun precedes its governing participle or preposition, as: வீட்டின்மேல், upon the house.

The Adverb precedes the verb, as: நன்குய்ப்பாடினன், he sung well.

The Infinitive precedes the governing verb, as: இருக்கச் சொன்னர், he told to sit down, or to wait.

The Negative part of a sentence precedes the Affirmative part, as: வழவாமற்பத்தீரமாய்கட, walk firmly without slipping.

That with which a thing is compared precedes that which is compared with it, as: இவனிலும் அவன் கல்ல வன், that man (is) better than this man.

The Similitude precedes that which is similar, as: சூரிய வைப்போல அவன் பிரகாசிக்கிறன், he shines like the sun.

The Number precedes that which is numbered, as: பன் எரேண்டுமரங்கள், twelve trees.

The Genitive precedes the governing noun, as: மனித்த டையதணம், the disposition of men.

The Cause precedes the effect, as: மழையீனுலேபுல்மு வளக்கும், grass grows by the rain.

The Reason precedes the inference, as: பறாபரன்கல்ல வரானபடியினுலே அவர்பாவமுண்டாக்கவில் வை, God is good; therefore He has not made sin.

The Design precedes the determination, as: நாத்சீவ கைக்காக்கச்சோறுசாப்படவேண்டும், we must eat rice in order to preserve life.

The Condition precedes the consequence, as: சாப்பிட் டாற்சாவாய், thou shalt die, if thou eatest.

SECTION XXXV.

(G. § 43.)

1. The nominative and its verb must agree in gender, number and person, as:

அவள்சொல்லுக்குள், she says. நாம்போவோம், we shall go. மாங்கள்வளருக்ன்றன, the trees grow.

The pronouns are often omitted; but when the verb does not point out the person the pronoun must be retained, thus: fGunsGassoGb, thou must go.

Names of superiors may have the honorific form, thus: பராபரன்சொன்ஞர், God said.

2. The nominative is often used for the accusative, as: புத்தகங்கொடுத்தான், he gave a book.

In personal nouns, the nominative is also used for the genitive or sixth case, as: மனிதர்குணம்பொல்லாதது, the nature of man (is) bad.

3. Two or more nominatives in the same sentence, if they are of the same gender, must be connected by **2**.b, added to each, thus:

புகுடகும்ஸ்திரீகளும்பாடி குர்கள், men and women sung. Here both are உயர்திணை.

இலாயங்களுங்குதீசைகளும் அழிக்கப்பட்டன, the stables and horses were destroyed. Here both are அஃறிணை.

உயர்தீணை and அஃறிணை nouns therefore cannot be united with உம் in the same sentence, and if both are to be specified, two sentences must be formed, thus:

மனிதர்அழிந்தார்கள்குதிரைகளும் அழிந்தன, men perished; also the horses perished; or the whole sentence must receive a new form, thus: மனிதர்கள்குதிரைகளோடு அழிந்தார்கள், the men perished with the horses.

4. Nouns of the same gender, in whatever case, thus connected by உம், may drop the உம், become nominative in form, if not so already, and add என்பவர்கள் to the last noun, if the nouns are உயர்திவண, and என்பவைகள், if they are அஃறிவண. This terminating verbal noun must then be put in that case which the connected nouns had before it united them, as:

ஆதாம் ஏவாளென்பவர்கள்பாவஞ்செய்தார்கள், Adam and Eve sinned.

யாக்கோபுஇயோவானென்பவர்களை அழைத்தார், he called James and John.

போன் வெள்ளி யிரும்பென்பவைகளைக்கொண்டுவந்தான், he brought gold, silver, and iron.

5. Instead of expressing all the nouns with உம் or என்பவர்கள், &c., in order to express only one or two and signify that the rest are understood, unite, in the nominative case, the nouns that are to be expressed, with முதலானவர்கள் or முதலியவர்கள் if they are உயர் தீவண, and with முதலானவைகள் or முதலியவைகள் if they are அஃறிவண, as:

சாத்தன்முதலானவர்கள்வந்தார்கள், Sattăn and the rest came.

போன்முதலானவைகளுண்டு, there is gold and such other things.

முதல் is a noun; ஆனவைகள் is a verbal noun, formed of ஆன the relative participle of ஆக்றது, and the

pronominal termination வைகள். The literal meaning then is, "those things in which gold is the beginning." Any noun which is common to the whole class to which முதலான or முதலிய refers, may take the place of வைகள் and வர்கள், thus:

- அன்புமுதலான நற்குணங்கள் பாவிகளுக்கில்லை, love and the other good dispositions are not to sinners.
- 6. If the nominatives of the three persons occur in one sentence, the first has the preference and governs the verb, as: நானும்கிரும்அவனும்வக்தோம், I, thou, and he came; thus also, கீயும்அவனுத்சொன்னிர் கள், thou, and he said.

SECTION XXXVI.

(G. § 44.)

1. The 2d or accusative case is required by all transitive verbs, by those verbal participles which are used as our prepositions, [see Sec. xi. 6. (2).] and by the comparing particle Gunso, as:

அவணையனுப்பினேன், I sent him.

தருமகாரியத்தைக்குறித்துப்பேசிளூர்கள், they spoke concerning the charity business.

அவர்களைவிட்டுப்போனன், he went away from them.

பட்டணத்தைச்சுற்றிமதிலிதக்கின்றது, there is a wall round the city.

அதைப்போல இதுவுங்கெட்டுப்போயிற்று, this also has perished like that.

- 2. The nominative is sometimes used for the genitive (see Sec. xxxv. 2.)
- 3. Camen sometimes the accusative, sometimes the third, and sometimes the seventh case, thus:

அவளைச்சேர்ந்தான், he approached her. பாலிகளோடேசோத்ரு, join not with sinners. ஊரிற்சேர்ந்தோம், we arrived at the village.

SECTION XXXVII.

(G. § 45.)

1. The 3d case is used to denote the instrument or cause, as:

கண்றைற்கண்டான், he saw with the eye.

தயவனற்குடமுண்டாக்கப்பட்டத, the water-pot was made by the potter.

Also when one thing is made out of another, this case must be used, thus: சொநுபங்கல்லாற்செய்யப்பட்டது, the image was made out of stone.

- 2. When formed with $\mathfrak{S}(b)$, this case signifies union, harmony, thus:
- உலகத்தோடேயிசைந்துவாழ்வோம், we shall live in harmony with the world.

When it signifies together with, sal is often added thus:

நேருப்புடனே (கூடப்) புகையிருக்கும், together with fire will be smoke.

3. All verbs denoting union require this case, thus: உன்னேடேசுடினேம், we joined you. மரக்கோடேமரத்தைச்சேர்த்தார்கள், they joined one piece

SECTION XXXVIII.

(G. § 46.)

The 4th or dative case is required:-

of wood with another.

1. By verbs that will admit "to" or "for" after them in English, as:

இரப்பார்க்கப்பீச்சைகொடுத்தான், he gave alms to beggars. கூலிக்குவேலைசெய்தான், he labored for hire.

இதற்குவந்தான், he came for this purpose.

Datives in the latter sense often add as the infinitive of ஆகிறது, thus:

கமக்காகமித்தார், he died for us.

2. By the intransitive verbs, போக்றது, to go, கடைக் கிறது, to be obtained, சம்பவிக்கிறது, to happen, இரங்குகிறது, to be merciful, பயப்படுகிறது, to fear, as:

சென்னபட்டணத்திற்குப்போனுன், he went to Madras.

கிருபையெனக்குக்கிடைத்தது, I have found grace, or grace has been obtained by me.

அவனுக்குத்துன்பஞ்சம்பவித்தது, he has been afflicted. எனக்கீரங்கும், be merciful to me.

தேவனுக்குப்பயப்படு, fear God.

3. By the defective verbs, உண்டு, there is; வேண்டும்,

it is necessary; தகும், it is fit; and their negative forms, இல்லை, வேண்டுவகில்லை, and ககாது, as:

எனக்குத்துக்கமுண்டு, I have sorrow, or to me is sorrow.

- உங்களுக்கப்பணமீல்வல், you have no money.
- கூலிக்காரனுக்குப்பத்துப்பணம்வேண்டும், the cooly wants ten fanams.
- இந்தஅலுவலுக்குஇவ்வளவுபேர்வேண்டுவதில்லை, so many persons are not necessary for this business.
- இதுஉனக்குத்தகும், this suits thee.
- கீக்தைமனிதருக்குத்தகாது, calumnies are not becoming to men.
- 4. By all adverbs, and adjectives that will admit "to" after them in English, thus:
- இராசாவுக்குவிரோதமாகப்பேசுக்குர்கள், they speak in opposition to the king.
- பராபரனுடையதீருச்சித்தத்திற்குத்தகுதீயாய்ச்செய், do agreeably to God's holy will.
- ககுத்தாவுக்குச்சமீபமாயிருக்கவிரும்புவாயாக, desire to be near to the Lord.
- அதற்து டானதண்டவையைச்சகித்தார், he suffered a punishment compensatory to that.

It will be observed that the adverbs are here formed from nouns of quality by adding suit to them.

- 5. By the particles கீழ், under, மேல், over, பின், behind, முன், before, and by the verbs composed of them, as:
- அதைப்பலகைக்குக்கீழேபோடு, throw it under the board. சலம்மலைக்குமேலிருந்தது,the water was above the mountain. அக்காலத்திற்குப்பின், after that time. அதற்குமுன்னே, before that.

சுவாமீக்குக்கீழ்ப்படியவேண்டும், we must submit to God. கல்லவர்களுக்குப்பின்செல்லுங்கள், follow after good people.

If such verbs be transitive they require of course both the accusative and dative cases. The simple particles are often used also with the oblique case.

- 6. By substantives denoting *limit*, region, rank, or relation, and some others which admit "to" after them in English, as:
- சமுத்திரம்இந்துதேசத்திற்குஎல்வையாயிருக்கின்றது, the sea is the boundary of India.
- சென்னபட்டணத்தீற்குத் தெற்கே தரங்கம்பாடியிகுக்கின்ற து, south of Madras is Tranquebar.
- அவர்எனக்குமுதலாளியாயிருக்கிகுர், he is my superior.
- இவளேனக்குத்தாய், she is my mother.
- புறங்கூறுகிறவனெனக்குப்பிரியனல்ல, he who backbites is not a friend to me.
- கீங்களெங்களுக்குச்சிகேதேர்களாயிருப்பீர்களாக, be ye friends to us.

Observe that the nouns here followed by ஆய், are not nouns of quality. They are not therefore formed into adverbs. ஆய் belongs, in these cases, to the following இருக்கிறது; and ஆயிருக்கிறது is a predicating verb, as will be more fully explained in the proper place.

- 7. The dative is used to express the comparative degree, as: இதற்குஅதபெர்த, that (is) greater than this.
- 8. Two dative cases express the particle between, as: இதற்கும் அதற்கும்மீகுந்தவித்தியாசமுண்டு, there is great difference between this and that.

SECTION XXXIX.

(G. § 47.)

The 5th case or ablative of separation and motion is required,

- 1. By intransitive verbs that will admit "from," after them in English, as:
- ஊரினிங்க்ணன் Or ஊரினின்றாகீங்க்ணன் Or ஊரிலிருந்து கீங்க்ணன், he removed from the village.
- தலையிலிருந்து or தலையினின்றுமயிர்தாழ்ந்தது, the hair hung down from the head.
- 2. With & \(\beta\), it is used to express the comparative degree, as:

அதிலும்இதமெல்லிது, this (is) finer than that.

இந்தமலையிலும் அந்தமலைபெரிது, that mountain (is) greater than this.

Note. The oblique case, having the சார்யை இன், must not be confounded with this fifth case.

SECTION XL.

(G. § 48.)

The 6th or genitive case.

1. Nouns which are the *inherent* or acquired property of other nouns, require those other nouns to be in the genitive, as:

அவசுடையதணம், his disposition. கம்முடையபணம், our money. மனிதரது இயல்பு, the nature of men.

2. Nouns which express the constituent parts of other nouns may be in the genitive, as: நெல்லத்தப்பை, a heap of paddy.

கீறிஸ்தவர்களுடையசபை, the congregation of Christians.

Note. The use of the Tamil genitive being restricted within these very narrow limits, in innumerable instances the English particle "of" and the genitive case of other languages cannot be translated by it. They may be so translated only when they correspond exactly to the Tamil genitive as described above. When they do not thus correspond they must be rendered in other ways. On this point, see large Grammar, App. 37, page 242.

3. When two or more genitives belong to one noun, the genitives cannot be united by the copulative conjunction as in English. We cannot say,

சிவப்பினுடையவும் பச்சையினுடையவும் நீலத்தினுடைய வுந்தன்மை, the nature of the red, green, and blue colours.

But the noun to which the genitives belong must either be repeated as many times as there are genitives, thus:

சிவப்பினுடையதன்மையும் பச்சையினுடையதன்மையும் நீலத்தினுடையதன்மையும், the nature of the red, green, and blue colours.

Or the genitives must all be changed to nominatives, and the verbals என்பவர்கள் or என்பவைகள் must be inflected in the genitive case and added to the last nominative in the series, thus:

சிவப்புப்பச்சை கீலமென்பவைகளுடையதன்மை, the nature of the red, green, and blue colours.

Or the whole sentence may receive another form, thus:

சிவப்புக்கும் பச்சைக்கும்கீலத்துக்கும் அடுத்ததன்மை, the nature which belongs to the red, green, and blue colours.

If but one or two of the nouns are to be expressed, and the rest *understood*, ωρρώω or ωρρώπω may be used as before explained, thus:

சீவப்புமுதலானவைகளுடைய தன்மை, or the nature of the red சீவப்புமுதலியகிறங்களுடையத and other colours. ன்மை,

4. The nominative is often used for the genitive when it can be used without ambiguity, as:

அவன்வீட்டுக்குப்போனேன், I went to his house.

5. The oblique case is often used for the genitive, thus:

புல்லீன்வண்ணம், or புல்லீனதுவண்ணம், or புல்லீனுடையவண்ணம்,)

Note. The oblique case is also used where the genitive cannot be. For a full definition of its several powers see Beschi's high Tamil Grammar, Chap. 11. viii. Mr. Rhenius has given a few partial examples on page 132 of his Grammar.

SECTION XLI.

(G. § 49.)

The 7th case or ablative of place.

1. It is required by nouns which express things existing in others as a component part of them, thus: කෙසෙරි

னிடத்தீல்விரல்கள்இகுக்கீன்றன, the fingers are in the hand; or simply existing in others without forming a component part of them, as: ஆகாசத்தீனிடத்திற்பற வைகள்பறக்கீன்றன, the birds fly in the air.

2. It is required by verbs signifying to be, to put, to come, to ask, to inquire, &c., as:

அவன்டத்தில்மீதந்தபணமுண்டு, he has much money. அவன்தன்வஸ்தீரங்களைமாத்தினிடத்தில்வைத்தான், he put his clothes near the tree.

என்னிடத்தில்வந்தான், he came to me.

அரையினிடத்தில்விசாரிப்போம், we will inquire of the gentleman.

எசமானிடத்திற்கேட்டார்கள், they asked the master.

SECTION XLII.

(G. § 50.)

The 8th or vocative case with or without the interjection ஆ, or ஓ, always commences the sentence, as: ஆ பராபரனே, O God! ஓ இராசாவேகீர்கேட்க, O king may you hear! தரையே, O Sir!

SECTION XLIII.

(G. § 52.)

The present tense is used,

1. To express the present time, as: இப்பொழுதுகலக் கமாயிருக்கீறேன், I am now troubled. 2. To express a state or action, which exists or acts at all times, or which is always the nature of a thing or person, as:

பராபரனிருக்கிறர், God exists.

மனிதர்பாவஞ்செய்கிறுர்கள், men sin, viz. at all times. தேவன்சர்வலோகத்தையுக்குரங்குகிறுர், God sustains all worlds.

3. It is also used for the future, to express வீணவு, i. e. quickness, haste, thus: if a person calls me, I answer நான்வருக்றேன், I come, whereas I am to be understood as saying நான்சீக்கிரமாய்வருவேன், I shall presently come.

Thus also, இப்பொழுது இரண்டாம் அதிகாரத்தை வாசிக் கீறேன், I shall now read the second chapter; lit. I now read, &c.

SECTION XLIV.

(G. § 53.)

The past tense is used,

- 1. When the past time is to be expressed, as: அவன்வந்தான், he came. நான்அவர்களைக்கண்டேன், I saw them.
- 2. In like manner with the present, the past is sometimes used for the future to express விரைவு, i. e. haste, quickness, thus: I say நான்உண்டேன், I have done eating, when I am to be understood as saying "I shall soon have done."
 - 3. It is also used for the future to express & & &

i. e. greatness, frequency, thus: இராத்திரியிலே அங்கே போனுயாளுற்செத்தாய், for சாவாய், hadst thou travelled there by night, thou hadst died, instead of thou wouldst have died.

The simple future may be used in Tamil where in English we should use the pluperfect potential, thus: கீபோனுயானற்சாவாய், if thou hadst gone, thou wouldst have died, lit. if thou went, thou wilt die. Observe therefore that in the example given above—போனுயான ற்செத்தாய்—the past tense is used for the future, as we may use the pluperfect indicative for the pluperfect potential, thus:

போளுயானுல் நீசெத்தாய், hadst thou gone, thou hadst died, (lit. if thou went, thou didst die.)

Instead of போனுயானல்கீசாவாய், hadst thou gone, thou wouldest have died, (lit. if thou went, thou wilt die.)

SECTION XLV.

(G. § 54.)

The future tense is used,

- 1. To express the future time, as: நாவைக்குப்புறப் படுவோம், to-morrow we shall set out.
- To express the present time in cases of இயல்பு,
 e. nature, habit or custom, as: நான்தச்சுவேலைசெய்வேன், I do carpenter's business.
 அவரையறிவாயா. dost thou know him?
 - 3. It is used in the same way in regard to past time

also, viz. to express *custom*, habit, டூட், as: முன்னோக்ள் பலவிதமானகாரியங்களைச்சொல்லுவார்கள், instead of சொன்குர்கள், (our) ancestors said various things, (i. e. used to say.)

4. In some cases the future tense implies doubt, uncertainty, as:

சனங்கள் அப்படிச்சொல்லுவார்கள், the people say so; meaning that the truth of what they say is doubtful. இந்தத்துண்டுச்சேவைபத்துமுழமாயிருக்கும், this piece of cloth will be (i. e. may be about) ten cubits.

SECTION XLVI.

(G. § 55.)

- I. The relative participles are invariably prefixed to nouns. They partake of the nature of adjectives; they possess, however, the same powers as the verbs from which they are derived. They also contain the relative pronoun, for which in Tamil there is no separate word, and that relative pronoun always refers to the noun with which the relative participle is immediately connected.
- II. To ascertain the case of the unexpressed relative pronoun we give the following rules.
- 1. In relative participles of intransitive and passive verbs, the *relative pronoun* is always in the nominative case, except when the relative participle is preceded by a nominative of its own. Then the relative pronoun

may be in any case except the nominative and accusative, as:

தோன் நியதுரிய எனக்குறித்தார், he described the sum WHICH had risen.

பராபரனுவேபடைக்கப்பட்டமனிதர்கள் அவரைமறக்கிறுர் கள், men WHO were created by God forget him.

கீங்கள்செல்லுக்றவழ்கெட்டவழ், the way IN WHICH ye go (is) a bad way.

- உலகம்படைக்கப்பட்டவிதம் ஆச்சரியமாயிருக்கின்றது, the manner IN WHICH the world was created is wonderful.
- 2. In relative participles of transitive verbs the relative pronoun may be in any case.
- (1.) If the relative participle has a noun, which it governs in the accusative, preceding it, the relative pronoun is in the nominative case, as: உலகத்தைப்படை த்தப்பாபரன்எல்லாரிலும் உயர்க்திருக்கிறூர், God who created the world is high above all.
- (2.) If the relative participle is preceded by a nominative of its own, the relative pronoun is in the accusative case, as: கீசெய்தகோணத்சரியல்ல, the angle WHICH thou madest is not right.
- (3.) If the relative participle is preceded by both a nominative and an accusative of its own, the relative pronoun is in any case (nominative and accusative excepted) which the connexion requires, as: பராபரன் உலகத்தைப் படைத்தவிதம் ஆச்சரியமாயிருக்கின்றது, the manner IN WHICH God created the world is wonderful.
- III. Every noun or pronoun in a sentence may have relative participles, as:

காஞ்சிபுரத்திலிருக்கிறபெரிய பெருமாள்கோயிலிலே யூழியஞ்

செய்கிறதாசிகள் பொன்னுற்செய்யப்பட்ட சுவாமிக்கமு ன்பாககடனம்பண்னுகிறுக்கள், the female devotees, who do service in the large Percomal temple which is in Canjepooram, dance before the swamy which is made of gold.

தங்களுக்காகமாணத்தையடைந்தஇரட்சகரடத்தில் அன்பு கூகுகீறயாவகும் அவகுடைய கட்டவளயைக்கைக்கொள் வார்கள், all persons who love the Saviour who died for them, will keep His commandments.

IV. If more than one relative participle belong to one noun, all the relative participles, except the last, are to be changed into verbal participles and construed in the same manner as the last relative participle, as: எண்ணிறந்த நட்சத்திரங்களையுண்டாக்க அவைகவைமீகவும் ஒழங்காகவைத்த பரைபரன்தோத்திர்க்கப்படத்தக்கவர், God who made the innumerable stars, and who fixed them in the greatest order, (is) He who is worthy to be praised.

If, however, between the relative participles thus changed, and the noun to which they belong, long clauses should intervene, and the sense be obscured, it is better to turn such relative participles into verbal nouns than into verbal participles, affix to each verbal noun 2.16 and 3.11, and add a relative participle of 2.55 fps, in the suitable tense, to the last verbal, with which the noun unites, thus:

இவ்வுலகத்தீலேமனித அவதாரம்பண் கூன்னவருமாய்மனிதர் யாவருஞ்செய்தபாவங்கவளிலிர்த்தியாக்கத்தமது சீவவண் வீட்டவருமாய்த்தம்மை விசுவாசிக்கிறவர்களுக்காகப்பர ம கதியைச் சம்பாதித்தவருமாயிருக்கிற இயேசுக்கிறிஸ்து வையெல்லாருந்தோத்தீரஞ்செய்வார்களாக, lit. may all praise Jesus Christ WHO is He that became incarnate in this world, and He that gave his life to atone for the sins WHICH all men had committed, and He that obtained heavenly bliss for those that believe (in) Him.

The same method should be observed when all the principal relative participles have not the same tense, as: ஆதீயிலே மகாதேவணுவண்டாக்கப்பட்டவைகளுமாய் எப் பொழுதும் பூலோகத்தாருக்கு மீகுந்தபிரயோசனங்களைக் கொடுக்கிறவைகளுமாயிருக்கீறகட் சத்தீரங்கள் எண்ணிற ந்தசேகணயாயிருக்கீன்றன, lit. the stars WHICH are those things that were made in the beginning by the great God, and those things that give always great benefits to the inhabitants of the world, are an innumerable host.

SECTION XLVII.

(G. § 56.)

- 1. The first indefinite mood, or verbal participle, is used for the finite verb of any tense. When a nominative has more than one finite verb, the last one only receives the personal terminations, and all the preceding verbs are changed into verbal participles. Their tense, number and person must be determined by the last finite verb, thus:
- நான்போய்அப்படிச்சொல்லுவேன், I will go and tell so; that is, போவேன், &c.
- சேவகர்வந்துகுற்றவாளிகளைப்பிடி த்துக்காவற்கடத்துக்குக் கொண்டுபோஞர்கள், the peons came, took hold of the criminals, and led them to the jail; that is, வந்தார்கள், பிடித்தார்கள், &c.

- 2. To give a peculiar emphasis to each verb in a sentence, or to show that all the transactions were done at the very same time, the particle உம் may be added to each verbal participle, and the whole be concluded with a finite form of ②质结态ps, or some other expletive, as:
- அவரையடித்தும்கிக்தித்தும் அவர்மேலேதுப்பியும்வக்தார்கள் they (at the same time) beat him, reviled him, and spit upon him.
- சத்தாருக்கள் கோட்டையைக்கட்டிக்கொண்டும்மீகுந்த கூக் தூலீட்டுக்கொண்டுமிருந்தார்கள், the enemy besieged the fort and (at the same time) made a hideous noise.
- 3. Negative verbal participles, when there are more than one, usually receive the உம், as: இவ்லுரார்வேலை செய்யாமலுக் தங்கள் சரீரங்களைச்சுத்தம்பண்ணுமலும் குக்கிருக்கள், these villagers neither work, nor clean their bodies:

Note. To avoid ambiguity, affirmative and negative verbal participles should not be intermixed, thus:

- அவர்கள்பராபரனிடத்தில் அன்புகர்க்கு அவருக்கூழியத்செய்து சண்மார்க்கத்தில் டைவாமற் பொல்லாதவர்களாயிருக் தார்கள். Here the verbal participles கூர்க்கு and செய்து might be understood as negatives because of the following டைவாமல்; but they might also be understood otherwise, especially in cases where the sense is less apparent by the connexion. It should be, அன்புகராமலும், ஊழியத்செய்யாமலும், டைவாமலும், போல்லாதவர்களாயிருந்தார்கள்.
- 4. In relating successive events in Tamil, the order of nature must always be strictly observed. We can-

not say, நான்கூலிக்காரணையனுப்பியிந்தவாழைப்பழங்களை யுமக்குக்கொடுக்கச்சொன்னேன், I sent the cooly and told him to give you the plantains; since I must have commanded before I sent, it must be இந்தவாழைப்பழங்களைக்கூலிக்காரனிடத்திற் கொடுத்துமக்குக்கொடுக்கும்படிக்கு அவணையனுப்பினேன், I gave the plantains to the cooly, and sent him to give (them) to you.

- 5. After the verbal participle no new subject can be introduced in the same sentence. The noun that governs the finite verb must govern all the verbal participles. If a new nominative is brought in, either the sentence must be entirely recast, or it must be split up into as many sentences as there are subjects. We cannot say:
- அவர்வந்தகாரியம்நடந்தது, he came, and the business went on; but: அவர்வந்தபொழுது (or உடனே, or பின்பு,) காரியம்நடந்தது, when (or as soon as, or after,) he came, the business went on.
- சமுத்திரம் ஆரவாரம்பண்ணிச்சனங்கள் பயந்தார்கள், is wrong. It may be written சமுத்திரம் ஆரவாரம்பண் ணிற்றுச்சனங்கள்பயந்தார்கள், the sea roared, and the people were afraid.

A new nominative however may be introduced after the verbal participle, when such nominative denotes a part of the first nominative, as:

- பட்டணத்தின் சனங்கள்பிரிந்துசிலர்யூதரையுஞ்சிலர் அப் போஸ்தலரையுஞ்சேர்ந்தார்கள், the people of the city were divided; some held with the Jews, and some with the Apostles.
 - 6. From the verbal participle win, of stops, to

become, adverbs are formed. In general these immediately precede the word which they qualify, as: இராவண் க்கீசமாய் எழுந்து போளுன், Ravanen rose up hastily and went away. But sometimes they may be separated, thus:

துரைகோபமாய்என்விண்ணப்பத்தைத்தள்ளினர், the gentleman angrily rejected my petition.

If there be more than one adverb, உம் must be added to each, either before or after ஆய், as: வானம் உயரமாயும்மக்மையாயும்குக்கின்றது, or வானம் உயரமுமாய் மக்மையுமாயிருக்கின்றது, the heaven is high and glorious.

- 7. The verbs, இருக்கிறது, கொள்ளுகிறது, வருகிறது, விடு கிறது, ஆகிறது and போடுகிறது are often added as auxiliaries to the verbal participles of other verbs.
- (1.) ②西达尼印刷; if the *present* tense of this verb be added to a verbal participle, the compound word will embrace both the present and past tenses, corresponding in some cases with our *perfect*, as:

புத்தகத்தைக்கொண்டுவந்திருக்கிருன், having brought the book, he is; i. e. he has brought the book.

இராமன்கோட்டைக்கப்போயிருக்கிறன், Raman having gone to the fort, is (there); i. e. Raman has gone to the fort.

If its past tense be added, the compound word expresses a past time before another past time, corresponding in some cases to our phyperfect, as: அகேக்கவியங்களையடைக்குருந்தான், தரித்திரனும்ச்செத்தான், having gotten many riches, he was; but died poor; i. e. he had got many riches, but died poor.

If its future tense be added, a past transaction in the future with another future will be expressed, correspond-

ing in some cases to our second future, as: ஒதுமணி நேரத்திலேளான்சாப்பீட்டிருப்பேன், at one o'clock, having dined, I shall be; i. e. I shall have dined at one o'clock.

Parts of this verb are sometimes added to verbal participles without any meaning, thus: எழுக்திருக்தான், he rose; is equal to எழுக்தான்; here இருக்தான் has no meaning: அவன்படுத்திருக்தான், he lay down; is the same as படுத்தான்.

(2.) கொள்ளுக்றது when added to a verbal participle denotes the continuation of the action which is expressed by that verbal participle, as: அவரைக்கோவைசெய்ய யோசுவைபண்ணிக்கொள்ளுக்குர்கள், they are consulting to kill him.

Verbal participles, thus modified by the addition of Gandon, may, by receiving the three tenses of Andrew, be farther modified in the following manner,

- இந்தச்சமாசாரத்தைக்குறித்துத் துரைகள் யோசவன பண் எனிக்கொண்டிருக்கிருர்கள், the gentlemen having (for some time) consulted about this matter, are (still so consulting.) யோசவனபண்ணியிருக்கிருர்கள் would simply mean, having consulted, they are; i. e. they have consulted. [See 7. (1) above.]
- அவர்கள்யோசணபண்ணிக்கொண்டிருந்தபொழுது அவர்க ளிற்பத்துப்பேர்ளழந்தபோஞர்கள், when they having (for some time) consulted, were (still so consulting), ten of them rose and went away. யோசவனபண்ணியி ருந்தபொழுது would mean, when they having consulted, were, (i. e. when they had consulted,) ten went away.
- கீர் காவைக்குவரும்பொழுது கான் எழுதிக்கொண்டிருப்பேன், when you come to-morrow, I having (for some time)

written, shall be (still so writing.) எழுதியிருப்பேன் would mean, having written, I shall be, i. e. I shall have written.

கோள்ளுகிறது is also added to verbal participles to denote that the agent did the thing to or for himself and not for another, as:

- அதையெழுதிக்கொண்டேன், I wrote that, (for my own use.)
- அதைச்செய்துகொண்டேன், *I have done it*, (for myself, not for another.)
- (3.) வருகிறது, added to verbal participles, denotes the continuance of the transaction, as: அந்தவசனம்ப்பொழுதுகிறைவேறிவருகின்றது, that word is now fulfilling. The verbal participle கொண்டு may be inserted before வருகிறது, as: அவர்கம்மையாதரித்துக்கொண்டுவருகிறர், He is (until this moment) supporting us.
- கருத்தர்இதைகிறைவேற்றிக்கொண்டுவருகிறூர், the Lord is (now gradually) fulfilling it.
- (4.) விடுக்றது, to leave, forsake, is added to some verbal participles whose meaning can admit the idea of leaving, forsaking. It strengthens the expression, as: பின்புநான் அவணையனுப்பிவிட்டேன், afterwards I sent him away.
- (5.) The past tense of Asps, to become, may be added to verbal participles to denote the full accomplishment of the action, as:

கீசமைத்தாயிற்*ரு, hast thou finished cooking?* நான்அதைச்செய்தாயிற்று, *I have finished doing that.* செய்து and சமைத்து stand here for the finite verb, and the meaning of the last sentence is கானதைச்செய் தேன் அதுஆயிற்று, I did it; it is finished.

(6.) போடுக்றது also, when added to verbal participles, often denotes the full accomplishment of the action expressed by those verbal participles. In such cases it has the force of அயிற்று, thus:

அந்தக்காகத்த்தையெழ்தப்போட்டேன், I have finished writing that letter.

அவனுக்குக் கொடுக்கவேண்டிய கடகணத்தீர்த்துப்போட் டேண், I have completely settled the debt which I owed him.

Gun Genes sometimes merely adds intensity to the sense of the verbal participle with which it is joined. Often it is only an expletive.

SECTION XLVIII.

(G. § 57.)

- 1. The 2d indefinite mood, (our subjunctive) only supposes that the action may take place, and must therefore always be followed by the future tense, as:
- கீவந்தாற்கொடுப்பேன், if you come I shall give.
- நாம் அங்கேபோளுல்மோசம்வரும், if we go there evil will befal us.
- 2. The 3d indefinite mood is a subjunctive, with although, referring to past or present time, as: அவர்கீதியா ய்கடந்தஞ் சனங்கள் அவரைவிசுவாசிக்கவில் வல, although he walked righteously, the people did not believe (on) him.
 - 3. The 4th indefinite mood is a subjunctive, with al-

though, referring to future time, as: புலிக்டந்தாலும்போ வான், although a tiger should lie (there) he will go.

These 3d and 4th indefinite moods must be carefully distinguished. The former is certain; the latter is suppositious, thus: பரப்பர்கத்தராயிருந்தாலும் implies not that God is holy, but only supposed to be so. We must say பராபரன்பரிகத்தராயிருந்தும், i. e. although God is, or was holy, &c.

4. If the past or future time is to be particularly expressed in the subjunctive mood, ஆணல், or ஆகில், may be affixed to any person or number of those tenses, as:

அவர்கள் தங்கள்கடமைகளை நிவனத்தார்களாளுலிந்தத்தி ன்பம்வரமாட்டாது, if they had considered their duties this affliction would not have happened.

காம்கீத்செய்வோமாளுற் (or ஆக்ற்) சவுக்கியம்வாளமலிரு க்குமா, if we do righteousness, will not happiness come?

ஆண், the 2d indefinite mood of ஆக்றது, means, if it be, and should be used in that sense alone. It cannot properly be used to express the disjunctive conjunction but.

SECTION XLIX.

(G. § 58.)

The 5th indefinite mood, (our infinitive) is used,

1. To denote purpose, end, as: சொல்லவர்தேன், I came to inform.

If the infinitive is not immediately followed by the

finite verb, it is better, for the sake of perspicuity, to use, instead of the infinitive, the future relative participle with $u\varphi. \&s$, or some other particle denoting purpose or end, as:

கான்மோட்சத்தையடைந்துகொள்ளும்படிக்குத்திரவிய<mark>ங்க</mark> வளக்குப்பையைப்போலவெண்ணுக்றேன், I count riches as dung that I may obtain heaven.

- 2. It is used to denote time, or condition, with respect to the past. It may then be rendered by since, as, when, whilst, thus:
- இயேசுநாதர்சொல்லச்சீஷர்கேட்டார்கள், whilst the Lord Jesus spoke, the disciples heard.

அப்படியிருக்கஅவன்என்னசெய்வான், since it is so, what will he do?

Note. This use of the infinitive being rather ambiguous, it will often be better to use the proper relative participle with a particle denoting time, or to use the ablative of a verbal noun formed from the root, thus: இயேகதா தர்சொன்ன பொழுத, or சொன்ன பின்பு, or சொல்ன மையில், instead of இயேகதா தர்செயல்ல.

SECTION L.

Verbal nouns are nouns endowed with verbal energy. They are of two kinds; see section xxvII.

FIRST CLASS.

Verbal nouns formed from the roots of verbs exert the powers of the verbs from which they are derived, thus: ` பர்சுத்தமாகஙடத்தல் (or கடக்கல் or கடக்குதல்) கியாய முள்ளது, lit, a walking holily (is) reasonable.

தீமையைச்செய்தல் (or செய்யல்) பராபரனுக்குவிரோத மானது, the doing of evil (is) hostile to God.

Since they are *nouns*, they may be put in any case required, thus:

தீமையைச்செய்தவைவிகும்பவேண்டாம், you must not desire the doing of evil.

தீமையைச்செய்தலாற்கேடுவகும், ruin comes by doing evil. தீமையைச்செய்தற்குஅஞ்சு, fear the doing of evil.

அவன் பட்டணத்துக்குப்போகையிற் சேவகர் அவணப்பிடி த்தார்கள், while he was going to the city, the peons caught him, (lit. in his going to the city, &c.)

அவனந்தப்போய்யைச் சொல்லுகையில் இடியவன் தவை மேல்விழந்தது, while he was telling that lie, the thunderbolt fell upon his head.

Rem. 1. Verbal nouns formed from roots by adding $\dot{\mathbf{u}}\mathbf{u}$, \mathbf{u} , $\dot{\mathbf{s}}$ and $\mathbf{s}\omega$, do not, in general, retain the verbal power, thus:

என்படிப்பு, my learning. மீதந்தஅறிவு, much knowledge. உன்னுடையநடக்கை, your conduct. அவனுடையபொருமை, his envy.

Rem. 2. The verbal noun in அல் is united with ஆம், (3d pers. neut. fut. of ஆக்றது) and used as our may, in asking or giving permission, thus:

நான்போகலாமா, may I go? கீபோகலாம், you may go. சனங்கள்உள்ளேவரலாம், the people may come in.

SECOND CLASS.

Personal and neuter verbal nouns, inasmuch as they are derived from relative participles by the addition of pronominal terminations, are equivalent to a relative participle, and a pronoun, thus:

```
கடக்கிறவன் is equal to கடக்கிற அவன்.
கடந்தவள், ", ", நடந்த அவள்.
கடப்பது, ", ", நடக்கும் அது.
கடக்கிறவர்கள், ", ", ", கடக்கிற அவர்கள்.
கடப்பவைகள், " ", ", நடக்கும் அவைகள்.
```

&c. &c. through all the genders of the third person singular and plural of the verbal nouns of the three tenses. See section XXVII. 2.

A thorough knowledge of the simple rules laid down in section xt.vi. in regard to relative participles, will enable us to analyse these verbal nouns, in every situation in which they occur, and give us ability to use, with precision and power, this most important and beautiful portion of the Tamil verb.

As relative participles are always connected with nouns, and verbal nouns of the second class consist of a relative participle and a (pro) noun, the rules given in section XLVI. are strictly and invariably applicable to these verbal nouns. We shall therefore subdivide, and exhibit these verbal nouns, just as the relative participles have already been subdivided and exhibited.

First. Verbal nouns formed from the relative participles of intransitive and passive verbs.

The rule is as follows: "in relative participles of intransitive and passive verbs, the relative pronoun is always in the nominative case, except when the relative participle is preceded by a nominative of its own. Then the relative pronoun may be in any case required, (the nominative and accusative cases excepted.") See sec. XLVI., II. 1.

- 1. Verbal nouns (formed from the relative participles of intransitive and passive verbs) whose relative pronoun is in the nominative. Of these,
- *(1.) Verbal nouns formed from relative participles of intransitive verbs.
- அங்கேபோகீறவன்எவன், who goes there, lit. he who goes there (is) who?

உன் is equal to அவன் he; and போடுற is the relative participle, containing its own relative pronoun "who" in the nominative case, according to rule.

- ஞாயிற்**ஐக்கீழ்மை**யிலே பிரயாணம்போவது பாவமாயிருக்கு ம், travelling on Sunday is sin; lit. that which shall go journeying on Sunday shall be sin.
- அந்தக்குடும்பத்திற்றேந்தவர்கள் நல்லவர்கள், those who have been born in that family (are) excellent persons.
- அப்படிப்பட்டவைகள் அவருடையதன்மைக்கு ஏற்பவை கள், such things (are) those which are suitable to his nature; i. e. such things are suitable, &c.
- (2.) Verbal nouns formed from relative participles of passive verbs.

^{*} In the examples that follow, the relative pronoun, which is contained in the relative participle in Tamil, is printed in the English, for the sake of distinction, in Roman letters.



என்னுலேயனுப்பப்பட்டவர்கள் உம்மீடத்தில் வரவில்வை யா, have not those who were sent by me come to you?

As has been mentioned above, when such relative participles are preceded by a nominative of their own, the relative pronoun may be in any case required, (the nominative and accusative cases excepted.) Therefore we have.

- 2. Verbal nouns (formed from the relative participles of intransitive and passive verbs) whose *relative* pronoun may be in any case, except the nominative and accusative. Of these,
- (1.) Verbal nouns formed from relative participles of intransitive verbs.
- இயேசுநாதர்மோட்சத்திற்கு ஏறிப்போனது சந்தேகமில்லாத து, without doubt the Lord Jesus has ascended to heaven; lit. that in which the Lord Jesus ascended to heaven (is) that in which doubt is not.

சற்ப்போனது; த is equal to அத; சறிப்போன is the relative participle, and since it is preceded by a nominative of its own, viz. இயேசு நாதர், its relative pronoun may be in any case except the nominative and accusative. If for அத, "that," we supply the words "that action," the sense will be clear; thus that action in which the Lord Jesus ascended to heaven is true. கான்ஊருக்குப்போவதாக்கையமான காரியமல்ல, it is not certain that I shall go to the village; lit. that in which I shall go to the village is not a certain thing.

Note. In the two examples given above, the verbals are neuter verbals. Personal verbals, formed from relative participles of verbs which, while intransitive, express an action, are never (to our knowledge) preceded by a nominative of their own; their relative pronoun is therefore always in the nominative case.

See first 1. (1.) above. But personal, as well as neuter verbals, formed from relative participles of purely neuter verbs, (i. e. verbs which, while intransitive, express no action) are often preceded by a nominative of their own, thus:

தேவது தர்கள்பர் சுத்தமுள்ளவர்கள், the angels (are) those to whom holiness is; i. e. they are holy.

கீங்கள் அண்டில்லாதவர்கள், lit. ye (are) those to whom love is not.

- அவைகள்சம்பலிப்பதெப்படி, how shall those things happen? lit. that in which those things shall happen (is)
- (2.) Verbal nouns formed from relative participles of passive verbs.

பாம்புவளுந்தரத்திலேயுயர்த்தப்பட்டதபோல மனிதனுடை யதமாரனுமுயர்த்தப்படவேண்டும், lit. like that in which the snake was lifted up in the wilderness, the son of man also must be lifted up.

Note. In this example the verbal is a neuter verbal. Personal verbals formed from relative participles of passive verbs are never (to our knowledge) preceded by a nominative of their own; their relative pronoun is therefore always in the nominative case; See first 1. (2.) above. They sometimes appear to be preceded by a nominative, thus:

கோற்றன் அடிக்கப்பட்டவன் செத்தப்போனன், here கோற்றன் stands for கொற்றனலே, and the meaning is, he who was beaten by Köttän died.

INFLECTION OF VERBAL NOUNS.

But these verbals, while they thus exert verbal energies, are nouns; and consequently they may be inflected in any case required, thus:



Verbal nouns (formed from relative participles of (1.) intransitive, and (2.) passive verbs) whose *relative* pronouns are in the nominative case.

(1.) அங்கேபோகீறவணக்கூப்பீடு, call him who goes there. என்னிடத்தில் வருபவர்களுக்குத்தருமத்தைக்கொடுப்பேன், I will give alms to those who shall come to me.

முற்காலத்தில்நடந்தவைகளைச்சொல்லும், tell the things which occurred in former times.

அங்கேகீற்கீறவர்களுக்குவழியைக்காட்டு, show the way to those who stand there.

மணிதருள்ளத்தில் இருப்பதைத்தேவன நிக்குர், God knows that which is in the heart of man.

(2.) அதீகாரிகளாலடிக்கப்பட்டவணயூடியக்காரதை ஒகு வனும்வைத்துக்கொள்ளமாட்டான், no one will employ as a servant him who has been beaten by the authorities.

ப்ராபாகுலே சொல்லப்பட்டவைகளுக்கு நாஞ்செவிகொடு க்கவேண்டும், we must give ear to those things which have been said by God.

Again: Verbal nouns (formed from relative participles of (1.) intransitive, and (2.) passive verbs) whose relative pronouns are not in the nominative case.

(1.) அவர்கள் அழுததைக்கண்டு நானுங்கண்ணிர்விட்டேன், I saw their weeping and wept also; lit. seeing that in which they wept, I also wept.

அறுப்புநாள்வருகிறதற்குநாலுமாதஞ்செல்லும், it is four months to harvest; lit. to that in which the reaping day comes, four months will pass.

பரமண்டலத்திலே யுனக்கு மிகுந்தபலன்வருவதாற் சோர்ந்த போகாதிருப்பாயாக, do not faint, because the reward

will be great in heaven; lit. by (reason of) that in which a great reward will come to you in heaven, faint not.

காக்போவதற்கமுண்ணேபோ, lit. go before that in which I shall go.

- கிசுவாசமுள்ளவர்களுக்கும் விசுவாசமில்லாதவர்களுக்கும் பெரியவித்தியாசமுண்டு, there is great difference between believers and unbelievers; lit. between those to whom fuith is, and those to whom faith is not, there is great difference.
- அத பராபானுடையமக்மை விளங்குகிறதற்கு துவாயிருக்கு ம், lit. that will be a cause to that in which (or, by which) God's glory skines, i. e. that will cause God's glory to be manifest.
- என்பிள்வளசெத்தத்தைலே எனக்குத்துக்கமுண்டு, I can sad because my child has died, lit. by (reason of) that in which my child died there is sorrow to me.
- கானங்கேயிராதத்தைலேயவன் இறந்தபோதன், he died because I was not there; lit. by (reason of) that in which (or, by which) I was not there he died.
- (2.) கீங்களிரட்சிக்கப்படுவதற்கு அவைகளைச் சொன்னே கா, I told you those things in order that you might be saved; lit. I told you those things to that in which ye shall (or may) be saved.

VERBAL NOUNS

Formed from the relative participles of ஆயிருக்கிறது, and ஆகிறது.

The verb ஆயிருக்கிறது, to be, is always, and ஆகிறது, to become, is sometimes, used to affirm one noun of ano-

ther. They affirm the noun with which they are immediately joined, of another noun, in the same sentence, which is their proper nominative or subject, thus: அவன் பாலியாயிருக்கிறுன், he is a sinner; அவன்வீண கூடுன், he became a fool. பாலி and வீணன் are here affirmed of அவன். See sec. Lvi, Lvii.

The verbal nouns of Augustans always, and the verbal nouns of Augustans sometimes retain this predicating power. The following verbals, not being preceded by a nominative of their own, necessarily have their relative pronoun in the nominative case, and consequently affirm the noun with which they are joined of their own relative pronoun, thus:

எல்லாவற்றிற்குங்காரணராயிருக்கிறவர்ஆண்டவர், he who is the cause of all things (is) God.

மெய்யானவுளியானவர் இவ்வுலகத்தீலே தோன்றிகுர், he who is the true light appeared in this world. See sec. LVII. 1. note.

LVII. 1. note.

The following verbals, being preceded by a nominative of their own, affirm the noun with which they are joined of that nominative, and their relative pronoun, according to the rule, may be in any case required; (nominative and accusative excepted;) thus: அவர்கள் உன் வனக்கொலை செய்யமனதுள்ள வர்களாயிருக்கிறது உனக்கு அறிவிக்கப்பட்டிருக்கிறதா, lit. has that in which they are of a mind to kill you been announced to you?

பெரியோர்களில் ஒருவணுணும் அவர்மேல் விசுவாசமுன் எ வனுயிருக்கிறது உண்டா, have any of the great ones believed on him? lit. is there that in which any one among the great ones is a believer upon him.

போன்முதலானவைகளுண்டு, there are gold and other things, lit. those things, in which gold is the beginning, are. See section xxxv. 5.

The verbal noun derived from the negative root show may also exert this predicating power, thus:

மேய்ப்பனல்லாதவனுமாய் ஆடுகளையுடையவனல்லாதவ னுமாயீருக்கீற கூலியாள் கோகுய்வரும்பொழுது ஆடுகளை விட்டு ஒடிப்போவான், lit. the time in which the wolf comes, the hireling, who is he who is not the shepherd, and he who is not the owner of the sheep, will leave the sheep and run away.

These verbal nouns may also be inflected in any case required, thus:

- வியாதியுடையவர்களாயிருந்தவர்கவைக் குணமாக்கிரூர்; he healed those who were sick.
- குருடனுயிருந்தவனுடையகண்கவளத்திறந்தார், he opened the eyes of him who was a blind man.
- சுவாமீககுத் தகுதியுள்ளதாயிருப்பதைச் செலுத்தவேண்டும், you must render that which shall be suitable to God.
- தட்டானேபொன்முதலானவைகளைக் கடையில்வாங்கியிர ண்டுவாரத்துக்குள் எனக்குச்சில ஆபரணங்களைச்செய்ய உன்னுற்கடுமா? O goldsmith! can you buy gold and such other things (lit. those things in which gold is the beginning) in the bazar, and make some jewels for me within two weeks?
- இந்த இராசா முன்னேடிச்சைக்காரனுயிருந்ததையறிந்திருக்கி நீர்கள், ye know that this king was formerly a beggar; lit. ye know that in which this king was formerly a beggar.

அவன்வியாதியுடையவனுயிகுக்கிறதைக்கேள்விப்பட்டேன்,

I have heard that he is sick; lit. I have heard that in

which he is sick.

Second. Verbal nouns formed from the relative participle of transitive verbs.

The rules in regard to such relative participles are three. The first is as follows: (See section XLVI. II. 2. (1.) "If the relative participle of a transitive verb has a noun, which it governs in the accusative, preceding it, the relative pronoun is in the nominative case." Therefore we have,

- 1. Verbal nouns (formed from the relative participles of transitive verbs) whose relative pronoun is in the nominative, thus:
- தருமத்தைச்செய்கிறவள்பாக்கியசாலி, she who does alms (is) a happy person.
- இயேசுநாதருடைய வசனத்தைக்கேட்பவர்கள்பிழைப்பார் கள், they who shall hear the word of the Lord Jesus shall live.
- கீறீஸ் தவைவிசுவாசியாதவர்கள் கெட்டுப்போவார்கள், they who do not believe (on) Christ will perish.
- பாவத்தைச்செய்கிறதுகேட்டுக்குஏதுவாயிருக்கும், sinning is the cause of destruction; lit. that which does sin will be the cause of destruction.

The second rule respecting relative participles of transitive verbs is thus given in section XLVI. II. 2. (2.) "If the relative participle is preceded by a nominative of its own, the relative pronoun is in the accusative case." Hence we have,

2. Verbal nouns (formed from the relative participles of transitive verbs) whose relative pronoun is in the accusative, thus:

கீங்கள்செய்கிறதுவிணுனகாரியம், that which ye do (is) a vain thing.

கீசொன்னதுபொய், that which thou saidst (is) a lic. விசுவாசிகளுக்குக் கர்த்தர்கொடுப்பது கித்தியானந்தம், that which the Lord shall give to believers (is) eternal joy.

Note. The verbal nouns in these last three examples are neuter verbals. This use of them is common. Personal verbal nouns, having their relative pronoun in the accusative, do also occur, thus:

பராபதன் அதுப்பினவர் தெறிஸ் து நா தர், he whom God sent (is) the Lord Christ.

அவர் எனக்குக்கொடுத்தவர் கள் மோட்சத்தைப்பெற்றுக்கொ ள்வார்கள், they whom he has given me shall obtain heaven.

This use of them however is unfrequent. *Personal* verbal nouns (formed from relative participles of transitive verbs) are generally preceded by an *accusatine* of their own, and consequently, in all such cases, their *relative pronoun* is necessarily in the nominative; See *second* l. above. Instead of using such sentences as the two last given above, it is always better to say, பராபரவை கைய்ப்பட்டவர் இறிஸ் துராதர்; அவராவெளக்குக்கொழுக்க மட்டவர்கள்மோட்சத்தைப்பெற்றுக்கொள்கள்.

The third rule about relative participles of transitive verbs is, that "if the relative participle is preceded by both a nominative and an accusative of its own, the relative pronoun may be in any case which the connexion requires; (the nominative and accusative cases being excepted.)" See section XLVI. II. 2. (3.) Consequently we have,

- 3. Verbal nouns (formed from the relative participles of transitive verbs) whose relative pronoun may be in any case except the nominative or accusative; the connexion determining in what case it must be, thus:
- பிள்ளதன்தகப்பலையடிக்கிறதுபெரியபாவம், it is a great sin for a child to strike its father; lit. that in which a child strikes its father (is) a great sin.
- காம் பராபரவனத் தோத்திரஞ்செய்வது கமக்குப் பிரயோசன த்தைத்தருவதாயிருக்கின்றது, our praising God will be profitable to us; lit. that in which we shall praise God is that which shall give profit to us.
- பாவியாயிருக்கிறவன் அற்புதங்களைச்செய்வதெப்படி, how can a sinner work miracles? lit. that in which he who is a sinner shall do miracles (is) how?

Note. The verbal nouns in these last three examples are neuter verbals. Personal verbal nouns are never (to our knowledge) preceded by both a nominative and an accusative of their own. As has been stated, personal verbals (formed from relative participles of transitive verbs) are generally preceded by an accusative, and infrequently, by a nominative of their own. See second 1 and 2, above.

INFLECTION OF VERBAL NOUNS.

Verbal nouns, (formed from the relative participles of transitive verbs) while they exert *verbal* energy, are *nouns*, and may therefore be inflected in any case required, thus:

1. Verbal nouns whose relative pronoun is in the nominative.



- நம்மை யுண்டாக்கீனவருடைய சீத்தத்தைக்றைவேற்றவே ண்டும், we must fulfil the will of him who created us.
- என்ண யனுப்பினவர்டத்திற்கு நான் திரும்பிப் போகலாமா, may I return to him who sent me?
- அவருடைய பாதரட்சையின்வாரையவிழ்ப்பதற்குநான்பாத் தீரனல்ல, lit. I am not worthy to that which shall loose his shoe latchet.
- 2. Verbal nouns whose relative pronoun is in the accusative.
- நான்கேட்டவைகளையுங்கண்டவைகளையுமறிலிக்கிறேன், I proclaim those things which I heard and those things which I saw.
- அவன்செய்பவைகளை நானுஞ்செய்வேன், I can do what he can; lit. I also shall (or can) do those things which he can do.
- கீ சொன்னவைகளின்கருத்துஎனக்குவிளங்க வில்வை, lit. the meaning of those things which you said did not appear to me; i. e. I did not understand, &c.
- கீங்களறியாததைத்தொழுதுகொள்ளுகீரீர்கள், ye worship that which ye do not know.
- Note. The verbals in these last four examples are neuter verbals. As has been stated, (See second 2. note) personal verbal nouns, having their relative pronoun in the accusative, do not occur very frequently; when they occur they may be inflected, thus:
- பராபரன் அதுப்பினவரை நாம்விகவாகிக்க உண்டும், we must believe (on) him whom God has sent. It is better to say, பராபரலை னுப்பப்பட்டவரை நாம், &c.
- 3. Verbal nouns whose *relative pronoun* may be in any case (the nominative and accusative cases excepted) that the context requires.

 $\mathsf{Digitized} \ \mathsf{by} \ Google$

- அவனென்வனப்பகைக்கிறத்னலேயென்னுடையவீட்டுக்கு வரமாட்டான், he will not come to my house because he hates me; by (reason of) that in which he hates me he will not come to my house.
- அவணயவர்கள்புறம்பேதள்ளினதைக்கேட்டேன், I heard that they had cast him out; lit. I heard that in which they cast him out.
- அவர்கள் அற்புதங்களைக்கண்டத்னல் விசுவாசீத்தார்கள், they believed because they saw miracles; lit. by that in which they saw miracles they believed.
- கீயந்தவேலையமுடிப்பதற்கு எத்தணை நாள் செல்லும், how many days will it take thee to finish that job? lit. to that in which thou shalt finish that work how many days will pass?
- கீ யந்தக்குற்றத்தைச்செய்ததின் கிமீத்தமுன்வனத் தண்டிப் பேன், lit. I shall punish thee on account of that in which thou didst that fault.

SECTION LI.

(G. § 60, 61.)

- 1. The imperative mood is used with or without the pronoun, as: கீயிங்கேவா, come thou hither; அங்கேபோ ங்கள், go (ye) thither.
- 2. The optative, or polite imperative mood, is used thus,
- மணை தென் நாயக னுக்குக்கீழ்ப்படுவாளாக, let the wife obey her husband.



அரசவனக்கனஞ்செய்யக்கடவோம், let us honor the king. கீங்கள்வாழ்வீர்களாக, may you prosper. கீர்போறமையாய்க்கேட்க, may you hear with patience.

SECTION LIL.

(G. § 62.)

The Negative Verb.

1. The first form of the negative verb (See section XXVIII. 1.) is used to express a general proposition without reference to any specific time, as:

இவன்தீருடான், this man does not steal.

Here DELTS embraces all times, and means he did not, does not, will not steal, i. e. it is not his habit.

தன்மார்க்கர்மோட்சத்தக்குப்போகார்கள், the wicked do not go to heaven.

It is also used specifically to express the future time, as: அவன்பண்டிகைக்குவாரான், he will not come to the feast.

- 2. The third form of the negative verb, which is made by adding இல்லை to the infinitive mood of the affirmative verb, expresses the past time; thus, அவன் தாழ்மையாகப்பேசலில்லை, he did not speak humbly.
- 3. The singular neuter verbal noun of the present tense with இல்லை, is also used to express a general proposition without reference to time, as: அவன்தருக்க மதல்லை, he does not steal, (lit. that in which he steals is not; அவன் being nominative to the verbal, and the verbal being nominative to இல்லை.) See section XXVIII. 4.

SECTION LIII.

(G. § 63.)

1. Transitive verbs made *passive*, by the addition of படுக்றது, usually require the instrumental ablative, as: இந்தக்காகதம்என்னலேயேழுதப்பட்டிருக்கின்றது, this letter has been written by me.

Note. Relative participles of படுத்த sometimes follow the infinitives of transitive verbs, without converting them into passive verbs, thus: அவர்கள்கர் சந்தையைக்கப்பட்ட இடம், lit. the place which suffered that they placed the body, i. e. the place in which they put the body.

- 2. படுக்றது is also sometimes added to the infinitive of intransitive verbs in the relative participle form, as: அவன்கடக்கப்பட்டவழ், the road which he went; lit. the road which suffered that he walked. கான்இருக்கப்பட்ட உளர், the village in which I dwell; lit. the village which suffered that I dwelled.
- 3. The third person singular neuter negative of படு கிறது is sometimes used with all persons in the sense of தகாது, or கூடாது, as: கீங்களிப்படிச்செய்யப்படாது, ye must not do so.

Note. From the relative participle பட்ட, and the words அப்படி, இப்படி, so, and எப்படி, how, are formed the adjectives அப்படிப்பட்ட, இப்படிப்பட்ட, and எப்படிப்பட்ட, thus:

அப்படிப்பட்டமனிதன், such a man. எப்படிப்பட்டமனிதன், what kind of a man?

And from these are formed nouns, thus:

அப்படிப்பட்டவன், such a man.

அப்படிப்பட்டவள், such a woman.

அப்படிப்பட்டது, such a thing.

அப்படிப்பட்டவர்கள், such persons.

அப்படிப்பட்டவைகள், such things.

&c. &c. &c. &c.

SECTION LIV.

(G. § 64.)

Some parts of the verb என்கிறது, to say, are used in a peculiar sense.

- 1. The verbal participle என்று is used,
- (1.) As an indicative conjunction, thus:
- பராபரன்இரக்கமுடையவராயிருக்கிருரென்று அறிந்துகொள், know thou that God is merciful; lit. saying God is merciful know thou.
- சனங்கள்தமக்குக்கீழ்ப்படியவேண்டுமென்று தேவன்கட்ட வளயிட்டார், God has commanded that the people must obey him.

It can in most cases be translated by that; but sometimes it can only be rendered literally, viz. saying.

- (2.) When the words of another are to be quoted in his own language, thus:
- கீங்கள் உங்கள் சத்துருக்களிடத்தில் அன்புகர்வீர்களாகவே ன்றுகர்த்தர்சொன்ஞர், the Lord said, "you must love your enemies," or, the Lord said that you must love your enemies; lit. the Lord said, saying you, &c.

If there are more quotations than one, each quotation must receive simp and the conjunction 2.0, thus:

விபசாரம்பண்ணுத்ருப்பாயாகவென்றும், பொய்சொல்லா திருப்பாயாகவென்றும் பராபரன்கட்டவையட்டார், God has commanded "thou shalt not commit adultery," and "thou shalt not lie."

OBSERVE

that since $\sigma \cos p$ is thus used both as an indicative conjunction, and a particle of quotation, it must never be used as an indicative conjunction in cases where, if it should be understood as a particle of quotation, a wrong idea would be conveyed. For instance, we say in English, "God has commanded that we must not lie;" but if you say in Tamil

காம் பொய்சொல்லாத்ருப்போமாகவேன்று பராபான்கட்ட வளய்ட்டார்; although you may have intended to use என்று as an indicative conjunction, it will be understood as a particle of quotation, and the sentence will mean that God commands that neither He, nor we, must speak lies. If you use என்று here, you must quote the command in the very words in which it was delivered, thus:

கீங்கள் பொய்சொல்லாதீருப்பீர்களாகவேன்று பராபரக்க ட்டவையீட்டார், God has commanded, "ye shall not kie;" or மனிதர்கள் பொய்சொல்லாதிருப்பார்களாகவென்று பராபரன்கட்டவையீட்டார், God has commanded "men must not kie."

The inf. என (என்ன), although used as the pro-

per infinitive of என்கிறது, is likewise used as a particle, in the same way as என்று, thus: கீவந்தாயேனச் சொன்னன், he said that thou camest.

2. The future relative participle என்னும் is used to identify persons or things, and is affixed to their names. It may be rendered "called," thus:

சீவனென்னுக்தேவன், the god Siven, i. e. the god called Siven.

தீருச்சபையென்னுஞ்சொல், the word "church." சந்தோஷ்மென்னும்எண்ணெய், the oil of gladness.

The relative participles of the passive form may be used in the same manner, thus:

சீவனென்னப்பட்டதேவன், the God who was called Siven.

- 3. The subjunctive என்றுல், or எனில், if thou say, or ask, is often added to interrogating adverbs and pronouns, as: என்னத்தேடைலன்றுல், if you ask, why? ஆ சென்றுல், if you ask, who? எப்படியேன்றுல், if you ask, how? என்னவென்றுல், if you ask, what? These compound words may be used,
- (1.) at the beginning of sentences, as:
 அவன்காவலில்வைக்கப்பட்டான். என்னத்தீஞலென்கு
 ல்அவன் ஒரு பீள்வையீனிடத்தில் ககைகளைக்கண்டு அ வைகளைப் பறித்துக்கொள்ளும்படிக்கு அதைக் கோவல செய்தான், (or more correctly, கொவலசெய்ததிஞலே), he was put in prison, because, observing jewels upon a child, he killed it in order to seize them; lit. he was put in prison. If you ask, why? he, observing, &c. Or
- (2.) they may be added to verbal nouns, thus: அவன் காவல்ல் வைக்கப்பட்டதென்னத்தீருலெனில் அ

வன் ஒருபிள் வளயினிடத்தில், &c. his having been put in prison, if you ask why (it was,) he observing, &c.

The sentence then ends as in the former case.

கீசொல்லவேண்டுவதென்னவென்றுல், that which thou must say, if thou askest what (it is) &c., i. e. thou shalt say thus, &c.

அவனல் அனுப்பப்பட்டவர்களாரெனில், those who were sent by him, if you ask who (they are), &c., i. e. those who were sent by him are these, &c.

இதுநடந்ததெப்படியென்ருல், it happened thus, &c.

In each case, the interrogating adverb or pronoun may be separated from the subjunctive, and be placed before the verbal noun to which it was affixed. The verbal noun then becomes a verb, thus:

தீ பென்னசொல்ல வேண்டுமென்றுல், ஆரவளுல ஹப்பப்பட்டார்களெனில், &c.

These interrogating phrases should not be used, if the answer, which it is their office to introduce, be quite short. In such cases the causal particle u = 19 should be used instead, thus:

அவக் ஒருபின் ஊகையக்கொடு செய்தபடியிருலேகோவவில்வை க்கட்பட்டான், he was put in prison because (lit. by the step at which) he killed a child.

- 4. The verbal nouns என்பவன், and என்பது.
- (1.) என்பவன் is added, as a distinguishing sign, to proper nouns introduced into Tamil from foreign tongues, thus: யோவானென்பவன், John. It may also be added to Tamil proper nouns, in cases of doubt; thus:
- சற்கண்ணென்பவன், Sătkunăn; சற்கணன் literally means a virtuous person.

It may also be added from choice merely, thus: சீவனேன்பவன்தமிழருக்கு ஒருதேவன், Siven (is) a god to the Tamulians.

This verbal may be put in any case required.

(2.) என்பத is thus employed. When we wish to use a whole sentence as though it were a single noun, we may add என்பத to it, and that whole sentence may thus be made the subject, or object of a following clause; thus:

மனிதரெல்லாரும்பாவிகளென்பதமெய்தான், that all men are sinners is certainly true; lit. that which shall say "all men (are) sinners," (is) truth indeed.

தருமங்களைச்செய்யவிரும்புவாயாகவென்பதைநான்றூல்க ளிற்கண்டேன், I saw in the books "desire to do charity;" lit. I saw that which shall say "desire," &c.

It must also be used when we wish to quote a single word, thus:

அறமென்பதற்குத்தருமமென்று அருத்தமாம், the meaning of "அறம்" is "தருமம்."

Note. For another use of these verbals, see sec. xxxv. 4.

Rem. The several parts of the verb என்கிறது, are equal to the particle என்று and the several corresponding parts of the verb சொல்லுகிறது. என்கிறது therefore not only means "to say," but always superadds to that meaning the force of the particle என்று, thus:

சீக்கீரமாய்வருவேணென்குன், he said, "I will come quickly."

Here the verb both quotes and concludes the sentence; என்முன் being equal to என்றுசொன்றன்.

SECTION LV.

(G. § 65.)

In those compound verbs which are formed by combining nouns with பண்ணுக்றத or செய்க்றத, (see sec. XXXII, verbs formed from nouns,) the noun is often the object of the verb with which it is combined; wherefore, these compound verbs, though frequently rendered in English by single active verbs, often do not govern other nouns in the accusative, and other nouns affected by them must be disposed of in some suitable way, thus: பிசுக்கம்பண்ணி குன், means, he preached; lit. he made a sermon.

But, "he preached Christ," must be, கீறீஸ்தவைக்குறீத் துப்பிரசங்கம்பண்ணஞன்.

செபம்பண்ணக்கடவோம், means, let us make prayer.

But, "let us pray to God," must be, பராபரவைகோக்க் (or நிவனத்து) செபம்பண்ணக்கட்டுவாம், beholding God, (or thinking of God,) let us make prayer.

போதகம்பண்ணிருர், means, he taught.

But, "he taught many people," must be, அகேசனங்களு க்கப்போதகம்பண்ணிறர்.

Thus also, அவர்கள்கோபங்கொண்டார்கள், means, they got angry.

But, "they got angry with us," must be, அவர்கள்எங்கள் மேற்கோபங்கொண்டார்கள்.

OBSERVE

1. That even these compound verbs may govern a

noun in the accusative, if it be a neuter noun, as: அக் தச்சங்கத்யைப்பிரசங்கம்பண்ணிஞர், he preached (on) that subject.

2. That the verbs தோத்திரஞ்செய்கிறது, தியானம்பண் ணுகிறது, and a few others, together with all compound verbs formed by combining nouns with ஆக்குகிறது, may govern any noun in the accusative, as:

பராபர**வை** த்தோத்திரஞ்செய்யக்கடவோம், *let us thank God*.

அவர்களைக்குணமாக்கிஞர், he healed them.

3. That transitive verbs formed of Sanscrit nouns by changing their final Aw into OseSps always govern the accusative, thus:

தேவணத்தியானிப்போமாக, let us meditate (on) God.

SECTION LVI.

1. Difference between இருக்கிறது and ஆயிருக்கிறது. இருக்கிறது simply affirms the existence of its subject; thus:

> பணமிருக்கிறது, there is money. கர்த்தரிருக்கிருர், God is.

But ஆயிருக்கிறது is always united to some noun; und it affirms that noun of its own subject; thus:

அதஞானமாயிருக்கிறது, that is wisdom.

இயேசுக்கீறிஸ்து தேவனுயிருக்கிறூர், Jesus Christ is God. அவன்திருடனுயிருக்கிறுன், he is a thief.

2. ஆயிருக்கிறது is thus united to a noun, and affirms that noun of its own nominative. But it does not affirm

that noun to be a quality or attribute of its nominative. It simply affirms the identity of the two nouns. It declares that the two nouns are one and the same person or substance, thus:

அவன்மக்மையாயிருக்கிருன், does not mean, he is glorious, but, he is glory itself.

அவர்கீதியாயிருக்கிறுர், does not mean, he is just, but, he is justice.

ஒளிகன்மையாயிருக்கிறது, does not mean, light is good, but, light is goodness. This mode therefore of affirming one noun to be an attribute of another noun is incorrect.

But it is correct to say பராபரன் ஒளியாயிருக்கிறூர், God is Light, because we wish to say that He is Light itself. So also

இயேசுநாதர் வழியுமாய்ச் சத்தியமுமாய்ச் சீவனுமாயிருக்கிருர், the Lord Jesus is the way, and the truth, and the life.

3. Mode of affirming qualities or attributes. The power of ஆயிருக்கிறது is always the same. The change must therefore be in the noun which is to be declared an attribute. If one noun is declared to be the attribute of another masculine noun, it, viz. the attributive noun, must receive உள்ளவன், உடையவன், ஆன்வன், or some other appropriate personal verbal noun, before it unites with ஆயிருக்கிறது. If it is affirmed to be the attribute of a feminine noun, it must receive உள்ளவள், உடைய வள், ஆன்வள், &c. If of a neuter noun, உள்ளது, உடைய வள், ஆன்வுள், &c. So also in the plural: thus; அவர்மக்கையயுள்ளவளயிருக்கிறர், he is glorious; lit. he is he to whom glory is.

Here & 1.9 (3.4 m) so affirms its own nominative, and he to whom glory is (as an attribute) to be the same person.

அவர்நீதியுடையவராயிருக்கிறர், he is just.

அவள்பரிசுத்தமுள்ளவளாயிருந்தாள், she was holy.

ஒளிகன்மையுள்ளதாயிருக்கின்றது, kight is good.

அவன் செய்தகிர்யைகள் பிரயோசனமானவைகளாயிருந்த ன, the deeds which he did were useful.

This rule is often violated, but it should be strictly observed, because it enjoins the most accurate, philosophical, and above all, the most perspicuous mode of expression.

- 4. When ஆயிருக்கிறது relates to more than one noun, the verbal part. ஆய் is separated from இருக்கிறது, and added to each noun with the conjunction உம் either before or after it, thus:
- கடவுள் நீதியுள்ள வருமாய் இரக்கமுள்ள வருமாயிருக்கிருர், or நீதியுள்ள வராயும் இரக்கமுள்ள வராயுமிருக்கிருர், God is righteous and merciful.
- 5. Ellipsis. When the sentence is in the present tense, and ஆயிருக்கிறது affirms only one noun of its nominative, ஆயிருக்கிறது must, or may be omitted.
- (1.) It must be omitted. When the noun affirmed of the subject is a demonstrative or interrogative pronoun, thus:
- தத்ரையைத்திருடினவன்இவனு, (is) this the man who stole the horse?

நீயேஅவன், thou (art) he!

அவனேவன், who (is) he?

இதுஎவ்வளவு, how much (is) this? அவன்எங்கே, where (is) he?

(2.) In all other cases, it may be omitted or retained, at option; thus:

நான்பாவி, I (am) a sinner; or நான்பாவியாயிருக்கீறேன். அதுஞானம், that (is) wisdom; or அதுஞானமாயிருக்கீறது. Thus also: அவர்இரக்கமுடையவர், he (is) merciful; or இரக்கமுடையவராயிருக்கீருர்.

அவன்சந்தோஷமுள்ளவன், he (is) joyful; or சக்தோஷ முள்ளவளுயிருக்கிறன்.

அவர்கள்பரிசுத்தமானவர்கள், they (are) holy; or பரிசுத் தமானவர்களாயிருக்கிறர்கள்.

அதமீகவும்கியாயமுள்ளது, that (is) very reasonable; or கியாயமுள்ளதாயிருக்கின்றது.

அதுசுரமானது, that (is) wet; or ஈசமானதாயிருக்கின்றது.

But if the sentence is in the past or future tense, the verb must be retained in order to express that tense, thus:

அவன்வியாதியுடையவனுயிருந்தான், he was sick.

Likewise, if more than one noun is affirmed of the subject, the verb must be retained to unite the nouns, thus:

அவர்கம்முடையஆண்டவகுமாயிரட்சக்குமாயிருக்கிகுர், he is our Lord and our Saviour.

Note 1. ஆதிறத், to become, has two uses. It may affirm a noun of its own subject; thus, அவன்போல்லாதவளுள், he became a bad man. Or it may have simply a nominative; thus: அத்தன் குற்துகும், you can do that. Its verbals ஆனவல், ஒனது, &c. also have these two uses; thus: (1.) They may irm the noun with which they are joined of their own relative

pronoun; thus: Ouders pulse appeared in the world. It is here equal to set the true light appeared in the world. It is here equal to set there exists and affirms that its own relative pronoun and light are the same person. (2.) Nouns may be prefixed to these verbals simply as their nominatives; then, according to rule, their relative pronoun may be in any case, (except the nominative and accusative;) thus: Arising the in any case, then according to rule, their relative pronoun may be in any case, (except the nominative and accusative;) thus: Arising the in the second of the second of

Note 2. Excepting this ellipsis of SIGEPS, there is none other in Tamil. Whenever precision, and perspicuity are at stake, repetition is unavoidable. This will appear particularly from the passage Matt. v. 34, 35, which has in Greek and in European languages repeated ellipses; but a similar construction cannot be imitated in Tamil, without greatly obscuring the sense. The passage ought to be rendered thus:

தீங்கள் எவ்விதத்திதுஞ்சத்தியம்பண்ணச்கூடாது. வானம் தேவஆசனமாபிருக்கிறபடியால்,வானத்தில் மேற்சத்தியம் பண்ணவாகாது, பூமிபராபரனுடையபாதப்படியாபிரு க்கிறபடியாற், பூமியின் மேற்சத்தியம்பண்ணவாகாது. எ ருசலேம்பெரியஇராசனுடையபட்டணமானபடியால்,எ ருசலேமின்மேற்சத்தியம்பண்ணவாகாது, கூட

SECTION LVII.

(G. § 66.)

1. Like the verb ஆயிருக்கிறது, the verb ஆகிறது may be united to a noun, and affirm that noun of its own nominative. In regard to their meaning, however, these verbs must be carefully distinguished. The former means "to be," while the latter means, "to become," thus: கான் சவுக்கியமுள்ள வணைதக்கீறேன், I am well.

நான் சவுக்கியமுள்ளவளுக்றேன், I become well; I am getting well.

Observe also another difference; ஆயிருக்கிறத is invariably united with a noun which it affirms of its own nominative, while ஆகிறத may be thus united, or it may be used merely with a nominative case, thus: மழையின்லேபயிர்ஆதம், herbage grows by means of rain. See sec. LVI. 5. (2.) note 1.

When ஆகிறது, relates to more than one noun, உம் is added to each noun, thus:

அஞ்ஞானிகள்ஞானிகளும்கீதிமான்களுமாளுர்கள், the unwise became wise and righteous. Compare section I.VI. 4.

Note. 29.5 is however sometimes used in the sense of "to be," instead of "to become," especially in its relative participles, and verbal nouns, thus:

- அன்புள்ள உராயெகர்த்தர், the Lord who is a gracious being; not, the Lord who has become a gracious being. ஆயெ is here equal to ஆபிருக்கிற, and is much more elegant.
- 2. ஆம் (the third pers. neut. fut. of ஆக்றது) is sometimes used as the affirming particle, yes; but the usual mode of giving an affirmative answer is by repeating the verb used in the question, thus: அப்படிச்செய்தாயா, hast thou done so? the answer is செய்தேன், I have done.
 - 3. Asns (the third pers. sing. neut. negative of

ஆக்றது) is often added to verbal nouns, signifying it must not, it ought not, as:

கீவம்பானவார்த்தைகளைப் பேசலாகாத, thou must not talk bad words; lit. your speaking bad words will not become, (or will not take place, i. e. ought not to take place.) பேசல் is nominative to ஆகாது.

4. ஆவத, (the future verbal noun of ஆகிறத) and its plural ஆவன, may be added to nouns in the nominative, as particles of introduction or specification, equivalent to the English 'thus,' 'viz,' 'as follows.'

அவர்சொன்னதாவது, he said thus.

அவன்கொண்டுவந்தவஸ்துக்களாவன, the articles which he brought are as follows.

Observe that such sentences ought to close with என் பதே, or என்பவைகளே, the finite verb ஆம் being understood after them, thus:

அவர்சொன்னதாவது, நரன்உங்களையென்பிள்ளைகளாக ஏற்றுக்கொள்வேனென்பதே (யாம்) he said thus, I will receive you as my children; lit. that which shall be, that which he has said is that which shall say, "I will receive you as my children."

அவன்கொண்டுவந்தவஸ்துக்களாவன, இகும்பு, செம்பு, ம gtb, கல்லென்பவைகளே (யாம்,) the things which he brought were as follows, iron, copper, wood, and stone.

Note. Sentences such as the last, where several substances are specified, may close with இவைக்கே; the rel. part. ஆகிய being understood before, and ஆம் after it, thus: மாம், கல், இவைக்கே; which stands for மாமும் கல்அமாயே இவைக்கோயாம்.

5. And is also used as the disjunctive particles "either," "or," and may be added to two or more nouns, or verbal participles, thus:

பணம் மாவது தென்னை மறமாவது அகப்படவேண்டும், either a palmira, or a coconnut tree must be got.

- கேல்வியைப்படித்தாவது மற்றெருதொழிவைச்செய்தாவது பிழை, live either (by) studying science or (by) doing any other business.
 - 6. The verbal nouns அனவன், அனது and அவது.
- (1.) Associate is frequently added to the nominative case of common nouns, (if they are personal nouns) in order clearly to point out the nominative, or give it special prominence. It is also often equivalent to the definite article "the," thus:

இராசாவானவர்கட்டவைகள்க்கொடுத்தார், the king has given orders.

ஆனவன் is also added to *proper* nouns in the same way with என்பவன். (See section LIV. 4. (1.)

(2.) Assist and Assist may be added to the nominative case (if the noun be neuter) in a sentence, when there is any doubt which is the nominative. Again, it may be so affixed when we wish to give special emphasis or prominence to the nominative. It is also often added merely as an elegant expletive, as in the following examples:

மாமரமானது சுவையுள்ள பழங்கவைக்கொடுக்கீன்றது, the mango tree yields delicious fruit.

போய்யானது அருவருக்கப்படத்தக்கது, falsehood is odious.

But ஆனது and ஆவது cannot like என்பது be added

to sentences, or used for quoting. (See section LIV. 4, (2.)

Note. Observe that same and same have no translatable meaning in these cases, but that same and same, when used as described in subdivision fourth above, have the meaning there attributed to them.

(3.) ஆனவன் and ஆனத may be added to nouns of quality to fit them to stand as proper predicates in a sentence, thus:

அவன்பரிசுத்தமானவன், He is holy; lit. he (is) he to whom holiness is.

அதுபரிசுத்தமானது, that is holy.

This use has been explained in section LVI. 3. and 5. (2).

SECTION LVIII.

(G. § 70.)

The several parts of the defective verb passib are mostly used with the accusative or 2d case, as:

இந்தமலைஅந்தமலையையொககும், this mountain is equal to that.

இந்தமரங்களை ஒன்றுக்கொன்று ஒவ்வப்பண்ணு, make these trees to be equal one with another.

But the relative participle \$5, and the verbal noun \$14, require the dative, as:

அவருடையமக்மைக்கொத்தமக்மையில்வை, there is no glory like his.

பராபானுக்கொப்பில்வல, equality to God is not; i. e. none is equal to God.

The negative form may be used with the dative, or accusative case: thus.

இந்தக்கல் அந்தக்கற்களுக்கொவ்வாமல் வேகுயிருக்கின்றது, this stone does not agree with those stones; it is different; or கற்கவையொவ்வாமல், &c.

Note 1. Sometimes it is used without any case; as, Dsq:

Note 2. அத்தக்கொள்ளு இறது, means, to allow, to acknowledge, and governs the accusative, thus: நீயதையொத்தக்கொள்ள வேண்டும், thou must acknowledge that.

SECTION LIX.

(G. § 71, 72.)

- 1. The defective verb Cario implies obligation, need, necessity, and is used with the infinitive of another verb, or with the dative case, thus:
- பீள்வாகள் நன்றுய்ப்படிக்கவேண்டும், children must learn well.
- எனக்கு வரவேண்டியபணம் முப்பதுவராகன், the money which ought to come to me (is) thirty pagodas.
- உமதுக்ருபையெனக்குவேண்டும், thy favour is needful to me.
- Note 1. The negative Communic is used only with the second person, thus: fracing price parties, you must not back-hite; with the third person, and must be used; See section, LXIII. 1. (2.)
- Note 2. The transitive verb Gaussian Department must be distinguished from this defective verb; both verbs occur-in the following sentence:

- மோட்சத்தையடையவேண்டுபவர்கள்பராபா இத்குக்கிழ்ப்ப ணியவேண்டும், those who desire to obtain heaven must obey God.
- 2. The defective verb மாட்டேன் is used with the infinitive of another verb, and means, primarily, will not, thus: அவன்கொடுக்கமாட்டான், he will not give. It also means cannot, thus: கீநடக்கமாட்டாய், thou art not able to walk.

SECTION LX.

(G. § 73.)

1. The defective negative verbs இல்லை, and அல்ல, differ from each other, in that இல்லை denies the existence, and அல்ல the quality of a thing.

Thus to the question, வீட்டிலேமாம்பழமுண்டா, are there mangoes in the house? the negative answer is, இல்லை, there are none. But to the question, இதமாம் பழமா (is) this a mangoe? the negative answer must be, இதமாம்பழமல்ல, இதுவாழைப்பழம், this (is) not a mangoe, but a plantain.

Farther, @ல்லை is added to the nominative case and always concludes the sentence; but அல்ல may be added to any case, and must always be followed by a clause to the contrary, either expressed or understood, thus:

- சர்தோஷத்தையல்ல துக்கத்தை யுண்டாக்கிஞன், he caused not joy, but sorrow.
- 2. The verbal participles இல்லாமல் and இன்றி are often used as prepositions, meaning without, as:

அவனுடைய அனுக்கிரகமில்லாமற் (or இன்றிக்) கெட்டுப் போறேம், (being) without his favor, we perished.

Note. If the sense is future, it must be, அனுக்கொகமில்லாவி ட்டாற்கெட்டுக்கோக்க் Here also இல்லா is the verbal participle: See section xxvIII. 7. (2.) note.

- 3. The verbal participles அல்லாமல் and அன்ற are used as Exceptive, and Conjunctive particles.
- (1.) As Exceptives. அல்லாமல் or அன்ற may be added, as exceptive particles, to the first clause of any sentence that ends with a negative finite verb. Between them and the word with which they immediately unite, the expletive of must be inserted. Their signification may be thus determined;

First. When added to a clause, which ends with a verb, they are equivalent to only; thus:

தன்பஞ்சம்பவிக்குமேயல்லாமல் இன்பஞ் சம்பவிக்கமாட் டாத, lit. affliction only will happen, pleasure will not happen.

கம்மைக் கனஞ்செய்வாரேயன்றி அசட்டை பண்ணமாட் டார், he will only honor us, he will not despise.

Second. When added to a clause, which ends with any other part of speech than a verb, they also mean only; but, in addition, they reverse the value of the finite verb in favor of the clause to which they are attached; therefore, since the finite verb is negative, they impart its affirmative value to their clause; thus:

நன்மையையேயன்றித்திமையைவிரும்பமாட்டார், (he desires) good only, he does not desire evil.

அவருடையக்குபையினுலேயல்லாமல்மற்றென்றினுவம்கா

ம் பாக்கியசாலிகளாகமாட்டோம், [we shall become happy] by his grace only, we shall not become happy by any other thing.

(2.) As Conjunctions. அல்லாமல் or அன்றி may be united, as conjunctive particles, to the first of two nouns, the second noun having உம். They are thus used in sentences that end with an affirmative verb. They then signify not only; thus:

பழங்களையல்லாமற்கீரைகளையுஞ்சாப்பிட்டான், he ate not only fruits, but also greens.

Note. If the sentence must end with a negative verb, 2.10 only should be added to each noun; thus:

பழங்கினயுங் கீசைகளேயுஞ் சாப்பிடவில்லே, he ate neither fruits nor greens.

அல்லாமல் or அன்றி may, in such sentences, be added to the first noun after it has received உம், or it may be inserted between that noun and the உம் affixed; thus:

பழங்கினாயுமல்லாமற் (or பழங்களாயல்லாமலும்) கீமைகள யோஞ்சாப்பிடவில்லு, he ate neither fruits nor greens; but it is best always to omit the அல்லாமல் in such sentences.

If the first noun be a verbal noun, it also must take உம் before it receives அல்லாமல் or அன்றி, thus:

அவள் பட்சமாகப்பேசினதுமன்றிப்பிச்சைகளையுங் கொடு த்தாள், she not only spake kindly, but she also gave alms.

Moreover, when the first noun is a verbal noun the sentence may end with a negative verb; but the verbal noun must then also be in the negative; thus:

அவள் பட்சமாகப் பேசாததுமல்லாமற் பீச்சைக்ஷளயுங்

கொடுக்கலில்வல, she not only did not speak kindly, but she also did not give alms.

Yet, even when the sentence ends with a negative verb, the verbal noun may be in the affirmative, if it is so qualified that it is made to convey a sense similar to that conveyed by the negative verbal; thus:

அவள் குருமாகப்பேசினதுமன்றிப்பீச்சைகளையும் கொடுக் கவில்வல, she not only spake harshly, but she also gave no alms. In analyzing such sentences as these, the verbal noun must be regarded as nominative to the verbal participle அல்லாமல் or அன்றி.

4. அல்லாமல் and அன்றி, with உம் affixed, or with அதவும், இதவும் prefixed, are used as conjunctions at the beginning of a sentence; thus:

அல்லாமலும், or அன்றியும், அதுவுமல்லாமல், or அதுவுமன்றி, **> mareover.** இதுவுமல்லாமல், or இதுவுமன்றி, **>**

5. The verbal noun அல்லத, though sometimes used like அல்லாமல் or அன்றி, is most frequently used as the disjunctive or exceptive particle "or." It may be put between any parts of speech, except the five indefinite moods, as:

கீகல்வியைப்படி அல்லது மற்கு குடுதாழிவைச்செய், either learn science, or do some other business. (Compare Section LVII. 5.)

Here the sense is exceptive; you are directed to do one of two things; but when the sense is not exceptive, we must use 2.i., as:

கீயப்படிப்பட்ட பொல்லாங்குக**ளைச்சொல்லவும் நிணைக்**க

வுங்கூடாது, thou must not speak nor think such evil things.

6. The verbal noun இன்மை or இல்லாமை, is often used to form negative nouns, as:

இரக்கமீன்மை, unmercifulness. சாக்கீரதையில்லாமை, laziness.

SECTION LXI.

(G. § 74.)

The defective verb 2 on, signifying existence, is used in the following manner.

- 1. The simple root 2 on, (with or without & affixed to it,) is used with the dative case, as a particle denoting into, within, among; thus:
- வீட்டுக்குள்ளேபோனும், we went into the house.
- மனிதரிருதயத்துக்குள்ளே பொல்லாத இச்சைகள் தோன் றம், evil desires arise within the heart of men.
- அவைகளுக்குள் இதப்பதானமானத, among them this (is) the chief.
- 2. The relative participle 2 sires may be preceded by the 4th, or 7th case, thus:
- வீட்டிலுள்ளயாவையுங்கெட்டுப்போயின, all things which were in the house perished.

When 2 sinson is added to a noun in the nominative, it makes an adjective of the noun, thus:

க்குபையுள்ளபராபரன், the gracious God.

Note. Observe that a strictly a relative participle in both the above mentioned instances. In the first example, its

relative pronoun is in the nominative. In the second example, the preceding noun is nominative to உள்ள, and its relative pronoun is in the 4th or 7th case, thus: இதைபயுள்ளபதாபதன், the God to whom [or, in whom] grace is.

3. 2 600 B means there is, thus:

என்னிடத்திற்பத்தப்பணமுண்டு, I have ten fanams.

பட்டணத்தீலே நூறுபேருண்டு, there are an hundred persons in the town.

As a particle denoting existence it is often prefixed to the verbs ஆக்றத, ஆயிருக்கிறது, ஆக்குகிறது, and பண்ணுகிறது. The last two may govern nouns in the accusative, thus:

கலகமுண்டாயிற்று, lit. a tumult became existent; i. e. a tumult arose.

கலகமுண்டாயிருந்தது, lit. a tumult was existent; i. e. there was a tumult.

கர்த்தர்பறவைகளையுமுண்டாக்கிஞர், God created also the fowls; lit. he made existent.

தன்மார்க்கத்தையுண்டுபண்ணிஞன், he formed a wicked religion; lit. he made existent.

These verbs are in constant use.

SECTION LXII.

(G. § 75 to § 78.)

1. The defective verb Gunzaio requires the dative case, either expressed or understood, as:

அன்னவஸ்தீரம்எனக்குப்போதம், food and raiment are sufficient for me.

இருபதுவராகன்போதாது, twenty pagodas are not enough.

- 2. The defective verb salways requires the infinitive of another verb, and thus forms the optative mood, thus:
- நீநன்குகப்பணவ்டைசெய்யக்கடவாய், mayst thou perform (thy) service well.

வையில் காகக்கடவது, let there be light.

Note. Sometimes 35 is added to 54 Casi; but it makes no change in its meaning.

- 3. The defective verb ததம் is used
- (1.) With the dative case, thus:
- இரங்குதல்உங்களுக்குத்தகும், or தகுதியுள்ளது, or தக்கது, it behoves you to be merciful.
 - (2.) With the infinitive mood, as:
- புருடன்தன்மவனவியையடிக்கத்தகாது, it is not fit that a man beat his wife.

The inf. அடிக்க is here equal to the verbal noun அடித்தல் or அடிக்கிறது.

- கீ செய்யத்தகாதவைகளைச் செய்தாய், thou didst those things which thou oughtest not to do; or those things which are unfit that you do; i. e. which are improper for you to do.
- (3.) Without the dative case or infinitive mood, thus: கீதகாதலிதமாகப்பேசவேண்டாம், thou must not speak in a manner which is unbecoming.

SECTION LXIII.

(G. § 78. § 79.)

1. Some parts of the verb & Séps, to join, to agree, are peculiarly used.

(1.) கூடும், the third person neuter of the future affirmative, கூடின் or கூடிய, the past relative participle, and கூடாத, the third person singular neuter in the negative, are used to express ability, and inability. They require the instrumental ablative in the agent, thus: இதான்னற்கூடும், I am able to do this; or, this will be possible by me.

என்னுற்கூடியமட்டுஞ்செய்வேன், I shall do as much as I can; lit. I shall do even (to) the limit which is possible by me.

எதுவும்அவனுற்கூடாது, he is not able to do any thing.

While these peculiar forms, as long as they are thus used, do constantly require the agent to be in the 3d case, their subject, if it expresses an action, must be in the infinitive mood, or the dative case of the verbal noun, thus:

அந்தச்சுமையைக்கொண்டுபோக (or, அந்தச்சுமையைக் கொண்டுபோக்றதற்கு) உன்னுற்கூடாது, thou art not able to carry that burden.

Note. அத்தச்சுமையைக்கொண்டுபோகிறது (or, கொண்டு போகுதல்) உல்குற்கூடா சு, is the most strictly correct form, but it is not as common as the other two forms.

- (2.) salars is also used in entirely another sense, viz.; it is added to the infinitive of other verbs in the sense of ought not, cannot, must not. It implies impropriety and command, thus:
- காம்அவர்களைத்தன்பப்படுத்தக்கூடாது, we must not afflict them.
- தனையினுடையசமுகத்தில் கீடிமே சிக்கக்கூடாது, thou must not enter into the presence of the gentleman⊖ு |

கடும் cannot however be used as the opposite of கூடாது in this sense. We cannot say,

அரையினுடையசமுகத்தில் பீபிரவேசிக்கக்கூடும், in order to express thou mayst enter into the presence of the gentleman.

We must use instead the verbal noun in அல் with ஆம்; thus:

துரையினுடையசமுகத்தில் நீடிரவேசீக்கலாம்.

OBSERVE

That foreigners are apt to join கூடும் and கூடாத to the infinitives of other verbs, in order to express ability and inability, thus: நான்அதைச்செய்யக்கூடும், I can do that; and நான்அதைச்செய்யக்கூடாது, I cannot do that; but this is not correct. To express the former sentence, use கூடும் with the instrumental ablative, (as shown above) or the simple future, thus:

To express the latter sentence, use கூடாத with the instrumental ablative, or such phrases as தீராணியில்வை, வல்லமையில்வை, thus:

```
அதான் ூற்கூடாது, OT )
அதைச்செய்யஎனக்குத்
தீராணியில் வல, OT )
அதைச்செய்ய எனக்கு
வல்லமையில் வல,
```

அதைச்செய்யமாட்டேன் may also be used, since மாட்டேன் though it chiefly means will not, also means cannot.

2. Questions and answers illustrative of the correct use of some of the defective verbs.

QUESTION.

நான்இப்படிச்செய்யலாமா, may, or shall, or Aff. செய்யாமலிருக்கலாமா, may I be without doing must I do so?

நான்செய்யவேண்டுமா, must I do so?

செய்யக்கூடாதா, cannot I do so? may I not? Aff. i. e. will it be improper? or will it be transgressing? have I no right?

்சீசெய்வாயா, will you choose to do so? also Aff. ் will you be able to do so?

ANSWER.

ரீசெய்யக்கூடாது, you must not do so. நீசெய்யாமலிருக்கலாம், you may. நீசெய்யலாம், you may do so.

கீசெய்யாமலீசுக்கத் } you must not be கூடாது. நீசெய்யவேண்டும், } you must do.

h செய்யவேண்டும், you must do. (h செய்யவேண்டு) you need not do. வதில்லை,) you must not do. Neg. <

நீசெய்யலாம், you may do.

Residential of you must not do.

(கீசெய்யத்தகாது, you ought not to do.
Aff. செய்வேன், { I will do; also I am
able to do.
I will not do;
Neg. செய்யமாட்டேன், { also I am not
able to do.

3. Of the verb Cungusps, to be like, the infinitive Cuns, and the relative participles of the past and future tenses Cunstp, and Cungus, are used with the accusative case, and sometimes also with the nominative, as:

அவகைப்போலச்செய், do like him. மரம்போலக்ன்றன், he stood like a tree.

சாத்தவனப்போன்றஇராவணன்செத்தான், Ravanen, who was like Sāttān, is dead.

Note. Curà is sometimes used for Cura.

SECTION LXIV.

(G. § 80.)

The Tamil pronouns are used as in European languages. They are frequently omitted, inasmuch as the finite verb often sufficiently points out the person, thus: இப்படிச்சொன்னேன், I said so.

The particular uses of each pronoun are as follows:

1. நாம், we, includes both the speaker and those who are spoken to; thus, if I say to you நாம்பாவிகளாயிருக்கி சேம், I assert that, we (i. e. both you and I) are sinners. Great men, however, when speaking of themselves, sometimes use நாம் instead of நான்.

நாங்கள், we, the other plural form of நான், excludes those who are spoken to, and is therefore properly opposed to கீங்கள்; thus: நாங்கள்போவோம், கீங்கள்இங் கேயிருப்பீர்களாக, we will go, (but) do you stay here.

காங்கள் is also used by single persons, when speaking of themselves, instead of கான், and is more definite than காம்.

- 2. கீ, thou, is always used by superiors to inferiors; கீர் and கீங்கள் are used by inferiors to superiors. கீங் கள் is more honorable than கீர்; கீர் is also used by equals. To say கீ to a superior, or an equal, would be an affront.
 - 3. அவன், அவன், are always used of persons or ass, அவர்கள், and அவைகள், sent.
 இவன், இவள், are always used of persons or இத, இவர்கள், and இவைகள், (See sec. xvII. 1.)

All these pronouns therefore are invariably demonstrative pronouns; thus:

தகப்பனுங்குமாரனும்வீட்டிலேப்ரவேசித்தபொழுதுஇவன்எ ஸ்மகனென்றுதகப்பன்சொன்னன், when father and son entered the house, the father said, "this (is) my son."

If so be here substituted for so the father must be understood as referring, not to the son who entered the house with him, but to another son not there present.

Note 1. அவர், இவர் are used as plurals in high Tamil, but in common life only as honorifics of a single person, thus: அவர் என்மேல் தடையுடையவராடிருத்தார், he was gracious to me. The ordinary plural அவர்கள் is also used as a still higher honorific than அவர்; it is often added to the noun denoting the rank of the person alluded to, thus: தரையவர்கள் அப்படிக்கட்ட வாய்கள், the gentleman so ordered; if the speaker literally means more than one, தரையர்கள் should be substituted.

- Note 2. When அவர், or அவர், or அது, is put twice, as, அவரைவர், அவரவர், &c. it means every one, each one, respectively. Usually the last one only is inflected, thus: பராபரன் அவனவனுக்குத்தக்கதாகப்பலனே அளிப்பார், God will recompense, as is due unto every man. Both however may be inflected.
- 4. The reciprocal or reflective pronouns தான், தாங்கன், தாம், refer to nouns of the third person; they are used instead of அவன், அவர்கள், அவர், when the nominative of the sentence, and not another noun, is to be referred to; thus:
- ஆசாரியன் தன்வஸ் திரத்தையுடுத்திக்கொண்டான், means the priest put on his (own) garment. If you should say அவனுடையவஸ்திரத்தை, it would mean the garment of another person.
- பளபரன்தம்மீடத்தில்மனிதர்கள் அன்புகூடுவண்டுமென்று கட்டவளயிட்டார், God has commanded that men must love him.
- அவன் தன்மணவியையுக்தன் பீள்ளகளையுங்கோவைசெ ய்தான், he killed his wife and children.
- Note 1. Neuter nouns usually do not require the reciprocal pronoun, thus: மறங்களிகொடுக்குறது, the tree gives (its) fruit.

Yet plural neuter nouns, when their respective natures (See 3. note 2. above) are referred to, receive it, thus:

- மரங்கள் தடி அதடி து சா தித்தன்டையீன்படி. கணிகொடுக்கின் றன, trees give fruit according to their (respective) kinds.
- Note 2. 516 is sometimes used as an honorific by a superior, when, in addressing an inferior, he wishes to avoid the blunt address of 5. 516 is sometimes used instead of 517 by equals; and 516 instead of 566 instead

indeclinable particles product and prob, must not be confounded with this pronoun.

5. The indefinite demonstrative pronoun Scirco. In Tamil, there are no relative pronouns answering to the relative pronouns in English. The Tamulian, in many instances, expresses that which is equivalent to our relative pronoun by using a relative participle or a verbal noun; in other cases, he does it by means of Scirco and the particle group; thus:

அந்தமனிதன் இன்று ெனைன்று எனக்கு த்தெரியாது, I do not know who that man is; lit. that that man (is) such an one, is not known to me.

அதாடுன்னதென்றுகாண்பிப்பேன், I will show what that is.

பூர்வீகத்திலே இன்னவின்னவைகள் நடந்தனவென்றுசொ ல்லு, tell what things happened in ancient times; or பூர் வீகத்திலே நடந்தவைகளைச்சொல்லு, tell those things which happened in ancient times.

In the same way இப்படிப்பட்ட is used, as: கர்த்தர் இப்படிப்பட்ட போதகங்களைப்போதித்தாசென்று எங்களுக் தஅறிவிக்கவேண்டும், inform us what instructions the Lord gave.

In order to express the English relative pronouns, some, instead of using இன்ன with என்று as described above, use the interrogative pronouns with என்று; thus: அந்தமனிதன்அரென்று எனக்குத்தெரியாது. பூர்வீகத்திலே என்ன நடந்ததென்று சொல்லு, &c. But this use of them is not proper, for, although in English the pronouns "who," and "what," are relative, or interrogative, according to their position, the interrogative pronouns

in Tamil are interrogatives only. They should therefore be used only in interrogative sentences. In those sentences, however, which are not interrogative sentences when considered as a whole, but which, inasmuch as they close with a verb meaning ask, inquire, &c., do contain a question which is to be asked, &c., the interrogative pronouns may be used in that question; thus:

அந்தமனிதர்ஆரென்றுகேள், ask who those men are. பூர்வீகத்தீலே என்னநடந்ததென்று விசாரித்துக்கொள், inquire what happened in ancient times.

SECTION LXV.

(G. § 81.)

1. The interrogatives எவன், யாவன், &c., எந்த, எ, &c., are used like interrogatives in the English language, thus:

எவகுடுடேபேசீஞன், with whom did she speak? எதற்காகவந்தான், what did he come for? எந்தக்குத்பையின்மேலேறுவீர், what horse will you mount? எவ்விடத்தீலிருந்துவருக்கும், from what place do you come?

2. In point of position, எவன், எவள், எது, &c., when in the nominative case only, often stand at the end of the sentence; the predicating verb ஆயிருக்கிறது having been omitted; [see sec. Lvi. 5. (1.)] thus:

அவன்எவன், (or யாவன்,) who (is) he? இந்தப்பணத்தைக்கொண்டுவந்தவர்களேவர்கள், who brought this money? lit. they who brought this money

(are) who?

Sometimes, however, the datives of the neuter interrogatives as and assist are placed at the end of a sentence, thus:

அதெதற்கு, for what (is) that? இதேன்னத்துக்கு, for what (is) this?

- 3. The interrogative particle of connects the interrogative pronoun said, or said, or say, &c., with a following demonstrative pronoun, and thus forms the compound pronoun whosoever, whatsoever, thus:
- களவுசெய்கிறவனெவனேஅவன்துன்மார்க்க<mark>ன், whosoever steals (is) wicked.</mark>
- கீ அளக்கீற அளவுஎதுவோ அத்னுலேஉனக்கும் அளக்கப்ப டும், with whatsoever measure thou measurest, it shall be measured also unto thee.

Interrogative adverbs are connected with demonstrative adverbs, in the same way, and for the same purpose, thus:

நான் போகிற இடமெங்கேயோ அங்கே கீயும்வரவேண்டும், wherever I go, there thou also must come.

Note. The p is frequently separated from the interrogative, and the construction of the sentence changed in the following manner:

- எவன் களவுசெய்குருஞ் அவன்துன்மார்க்கன். இ பெறிஞ லேயளக்கிருயோஅதிஞைலேயுகைக்குமளக்கப்படும், &c.; but this is not elegant.
- 4. The particle உம் forms the interrogative pronouns எவன், யாவன், &c., into the distributive pronouns every one, all, thus:

எவனும்வரலாம், every one may come.

- எளியவர்கள் யாவருக்கும்பிச்சைகொடுக்கலாம், (we) may give alms to every poor man. (See sec. xvIII. 3.)
- 5. The addition of ஆக்லும் or ஆணும், (fourth indefinite moods of ஆக்றது,) changes interrogative pronouns into the indefinite pronouns at least one, any one, whoever, thus: எவனைக்லும்போகவேண்டும், one or the other must go. (See sec. XVIII. 5.)
- Note 1. The difference between 2.13 and 32.213 is that 2.13 fixes the meaning upon all, whereas 22.214 is indefinite, thus:
- எவனும்போகவேண்டும், means all (without exception) must go; but, எவஞ்சதும்போகவேண்டும், means any one, at least one, (of the number) must go, (all need not go); lit. although it should be who (he) must go. Thus also;
- எக, what thing ? எதவும், every thing ; எதுவாகி**து**ம், any thing.
- யாவர், what persons? பாவரும், all persons ; பாவராளு அம், whatsoever persons ; any persons.
- எப்படி, how ? எப்படியும், in what manner soever ; எப்படிட யாக் அும், in any way ; at any rate.
- எவ்வளவு, how much? எவ்வளவும், any quantity; எவ்வளவா ூதும், any quantity.
- எப்பொழுது, when ≩ எப்பொழுதம், always; எப்பொழுதா இதும், any time.
- எங்கு or எங்கே, where? எங்கும், every where ; எங்கேயாஞ அம், any where.
- எக்காலம், what time? எக்காலமும், at all times; எக்காலமா இதும், at any time.

It will be noticed that in one or two of these instances the nature of the interrogative is such that **2.** And **3.** And **3.** And **3.** In reference to some of the other examples

- Note 2. Verbs when in the fourth indefinite mood exert an influence upon preceding interrogatives exactly like that which is exerted upon them by affixing
- எவன்வந்தானஞ்சந்தோஷத்தைப்பெறுவான், whoever comes (any one that comes) shall get a present.
- தீயெந்தப்புண்ணியத்தைச்செய்தாதும் அதிருலே பாவமன் னிப்பைப்பெற்றுக்கொள்ளமாட்டாய்,whatsoever good deed thou doest, thereby thou shalt not obtain forgiveness of sin.
- 6. From the interrogative letter σ is formed σώσω, what? why? It is used—
 - (1.) As a pronominal adjective, thus:
- என்னகாரியங்களைச்சொன்னன், what things did he say?
- (2.) Independently as a noun, and is thus declined; என்னத்தை, what? என்னத்தனை, by what? என் னத்துக்கு, to what? or, for what, &c.?

When used as a noun, it may stand either before a finite verb, thus:

என்னத்தைச் (or என்ன) செய்தான், what did he do? அவர்என்னத்திஞலேகோபமடைந்தார், why did he get angry?

Or it may stand after a neuter verbal noun; and if that verbal noun has only a *subject* expressed, என்ன means "what?" if the verbal has both a subject and object expressed, என்ன means "why?" thus:

அவர்சொன்னதென்ன, what did he say? lit. that which he said (is) what?

அவர்அதைச்சொன்னதென்ன, why did he say that?

Note. From σ is also formed the interrogative particle $\sigma \hat{\omega}$, why? which is not used in common language. The common people have changed it to $\sigma \hat{\omega}$, which they use like $\sigma \hat{\omega}$ $\hat{\omega}$ $\hat{\omega}$

அவனதையேன்செய்தான், or $\}$ why did he do that?

They use என் also as an emphatic particle of entreaty, thus, நீசொல்லேன், or நீர்சொல்லுமேன், pray say on! Sometimes they add it to the third person singular masculine future, thus, சொல்வானேன், which they then use with any person, thus:

நீபிப்படிச்சொல்வானேன், why do you say so?

தாம் அப்படிப்போவானேன், why shall we go that way?
But this should never be imitated; we should say instead

But this should never be imitated; we should say instead என்னத்தெருவெயப்படிக்கொல்ஹுகிருய், or, நீயப்படிக்கொ ஸ்லவேண்டுவதென்ன, &c.

SECTION LXVI.

Particles.

(G. § 82.)

I. The particle up, as, according to, is affixed to any relative participle; or to any noun in the oblique case, (the oblique case in & being generally used;) thus:

அவர்கட்டவளயிட்டபடி செய்வேன், I shall do as he has commanded.

தேவவசனத்தின்படி.டைப்பீர்களாக, may you walk according to the word of God.

Note. The dative படிக்கு may be added like படி to the oblique case of nouns; the meaning remains the same; thus:

அவருடையவசனத்தின்படிக்கு, or \ we did according அவருடையவசனப்படிக்குச்செய்தோம், \ to his word.

- 2. படி means a measure, a step; and when used in the third case, படியால் or படியின்ல், it becomes the particle because, by reason of, as, since, and is employed only with the present and past relative participles, thus:
- கீயிதைச்செய்தபடியாற் சபிக்கப்பட்டாய், because thou didst this, thou wast cursed; lit. by the step at which thou didst this, thou wast cursed.
- 3. When it is used in the dative case, up is, or in the adverbial form up uni, up uns, it denotes purpose, end, effect, and must be rendered by so that, in order to. It is used only with the future relative participle; thus:

மனிதர்களையிரட்சிக்கும்படிக்குப் (or படியாய்ப் or படியா கப்) பராபரன் தமது குமாரவையிவ்வுலகத்திற்கு அனுப்பி ஞர், God sent his Son into this world in order to save men; lit. to the step at which (he) will (or may) save men, God sent his Son.

Note. படி is frequently used with the future participle instead of படிக்கு. Observe that படியால், படிக்கு, and படி, must receive உம் when they are added to more than one clause in the same sentence.

SECTION LXVII.

(G. § 83 to § 86.)

- 1. The particle or is used-
- (1.) To give emphasis to any word. It then means certainly, doubtless; and is called தேற்றம் i. c. certainty, thus:

- கற்புலவருக்குப்புகழேயேற்றது, doubtless praise (or, praise indeed) is that which is due to good poets.
- (2.) As a disjunctive conjunction (பிர்த்தல்,) meaning none other but, only, thus:
- இராசனேகொடுத்தான், none other but the king gave.
- (3.) As an euphonic particle. It has no particular meaning, and may be added to any words, thus: படியி குலே, அவளுடே, என்னிடத்திலே, &c. It is however better to avoid it.
- (4.) As the sign of the vocative case, thus: தகப்ப னே, O father!
 - 2. The particle op is used-
- (1.) As an interrogative; it must then be annexed to the word upon which the interrogative stress is to be laid, thus:

அவனேவல்லவன், (is) HE the strong one? அவன்வல்லவனே, (is) he the STRONG ONE? மதுரைக்குப்போக்முனே, does he go to Madura? மதுரைக்கோபோக்முன், does he go to MADURA?

If the question be in reference to several objects, each of those objects receives \mathfrak{D} , and an interrogative pronoun usually follows, thus:

கோத்தஞேசாத்தஞேஎவன்வந்தான், who came, Köttăn or Sāttān?

உன்பாவம் மன்னிக்கப்பட்டதென்று கட்டவளயிடுகிறதோ உன்படுக்கையையெடுத்துக்கொண்டுபோவென்று கட்ட வளயிடுகிறதோஎதுஎளிது, which (is) easier to say, (or command), "thy sins are forgiven thee," or "take up thy bed and walk"?

Sometimes the concluding interrogative pronoun is omitted, thus:

- அந்தமரம் ஆலமரமோமாமரமோ, (is) that tree a Banian or a Mangoe tree?
- (2.) As a negative, thus: நான்வந்தேறே, did I come? meaning I did not come.
- (3.) As a particle of doubt, when a question is raised in reference to several objects. The first of may then be rendered as whether, and the second as or, thus:

அந்தமரம் ஆலமரமோமாமரமோ, (I do not know) whether that tree (is) a Banian or a Mangoe tree.

Note. Observe therefore that the sentence AFFLOSLIS OLDS GLOTLOSLOS CLOT may be a question, (see (1.) above); or it may be an answer indicating doubt. But though the form of both is the same, there is a wide difference in the manner of speaking them.

- (4.) As an interjection, both of wonder and pity, thus:
 - ஒஒபெரியன், oh! oh! what a great man!
 - ஒஒகொடியன், oh! oh! what a cruel man!
- (5.) As a particle of regret; for instance, some one tells me that a traveller journeying alone, has been killed by robbers; I reply angualitation. Gan. if four men had gone along, would it have been so! or, therefore, has the force of would it have been so! or, would he not have lived! The sentence then is about equivalent to the English expression oh! if four men had but gone with him!
 - 3. The particle & is used—

(1.) As an interrogative; and, like Θ , it must be added to the word upon which the interrogative stress is to be laid, thus:

வந்தாயா, hast thou come?

இப்படியாசெய்தாய், hast thou done so?

(2.) As an interjection; it then, like \mathfrak{D} , may precede the vocative case, thus:

Note. 3 is more frequently used as a simple interrogative than 9, because it is less ambiguous.

SECTION LXVIII.

(G. § 86.)

The particle 2 is has various applications.

1. It is used as a copulative conjunction. It must then be added to each of the several words which it connects. All words may thus be connected by & \(\bar{\omega}\), except genitive and vocative cases, relative participles, and finite verbs. (See sec. xxxv. 3. 4. and sec. xl. 3.)

Wote. It is both elegant and perspicuous thus to affix L.L., when used as a copulative, to each of the several words which it connects. This therefore should be the general rule both in speaking, and writing. But a series of nouns, when the nouns are in the nominative case, may also be connected together by simply adding L.L. to the last noun only; and, when the nouns are in any other case, (genitive and vocative excepted) they

may be connected by changing all the nouns in the series into the nominative case excepting the last noun, which must retain its case, and receive 2.b, thus:

வீசுவாசல்தோட்டத்தாவையும் அழித்தான், he destroyed the house, inner court, garden, and well; instead of வீட்டை யும்வாசஃயுந்தோட்டத்தையுத்தாவையும்அழித்தான்.

- 2. 2. is also used singly.
- (1.) To point out a negative. It then means even, thus:
- அவன்வருதலுக்கீது, even his coming (is) an evil; which implies that his not coming also is an evil.
 - (2.) To point out something understood, thus:
- இராமனும்வந்தான், Raman also has come; which implies that others had come before Raman came.
 - (3.) To point out completion, entireness, thus:

அவனுடையகண்ணிரண்டுஞ்சிவந்தன, both his eyes were red; which implies that the man has but two eyes; if உம் were omitted, the sentence would imply that he had more than two eyes, and that two of the number were red. Thus also:

தமிழ்நாட்டு வெந்தரும்வந்தார்கள், the three kings of the Tamil country came; which implies that there were only three.

உம், in this sense, is added to interrogatives and changes them into distributives. (See sec. Lxv. 4.)

(4.) உம் added to the fifth case forms the comparative degree; (see sec. XXXIX. 2.) thus:

அவன்புலியினுங்கொடியன், he (is) more cruel than a tiger.

SECTION LXIX.

(G § 87. § 88.)

- 1. The particles என்று and என, besides being used as indicative conjunctions, and particles of quotation, [See sec. Liv. 1. (1.) and (2.)] are also used—
- (1.) As particles of similarity meaning as, like, thus: இவனவரைத்தகப்பணென்றுகனம்பண்ணன்ன், he honored him as his father.
- மாமெனவளர்ந்தான், he grew like a tree.
- (2.) As copulative conjunctions. They are then added to each noun; and the total number of the nouns with 2.b, may, or may not, be inserted after the last noun; thus:
- கல்லென்றுமுள்ளென்றுசெடியென்றுமுன்றுங்கண்டான், or கல்லென்றுமுள்ளென்றுசெடியென்றுகண்டான், he saw stones, thorns, and shrubs.
- சாத்தனெனக்கொற்றனெனஇராமனென (மூவரும்) வந்தா ர்கள், Sattan, Kottan and Raman came.
- (3.) In a peculiar manner; viz., to quote sounds, thus:
- வீடுமடமடவென்றுவிழந்தது, lit. the house fell saying மட மட; i. e. it fell with a crackling noise.
- படபடவென்றுவேவைசெய், i. e. இடைவிடாமல், or, சீக் கீரமாகவேவைசெய்; work without intermission, or, work quickly.
- தீடீரெனஎழுந்தான், i. e. சடுதியாய்எழுந்தான், he rose suddenly.

நரம்புவிண்ணென இசைத்தது, the pulse sounded saying விண்; i. e. the pulse beat strongly, or, loudly.

As has been already stated, the several parts of the verb என்கிறது are equivalent both to the particle என்று and the several corresponding parts of the verb சொல் லுகிறது; என therefore, although it is, when used as a particle, equivalent simply to the particle என்ற, may also be used as a proper infinitive of the verb என்கிறது, thus:

ஊசெனப்படுவத உறையூர், Ooreiyoor (is) that which shall be called a town; i. e. it has every thing belonging to a town, and is therefore worthy to be called a town.

என is here equal to என்றுசொல்ல, thus: ஊரேனப் படுவது, or ஊரென்றுசொல்லப்படுவது.

- 2. The particles இன்னம் and இன்னும், still, yet, until now, are used—
- (1.) With reference to the future time, meaning இன்மேலும், thus:
- அவன்வரும்படி சொன்னேன் வாவில்லை யின்னம் பார்ப் பேன், I told him to come; but (he) has not come; I shall still wait.
- (2.) With reference to the present time, meaning இதுவரைக்கும், thus:
- அவன்வரும்படி சொன்னேன் இன்னும்வரவில்வை, I told him to come, but he has not yet come.

Note. These particles cannot, like the English yet, be used with reference to the past time. We cannot say,

அவளேயின்னமடித்தான், he beat him still (or yet) more; here பின்னும் must be used instead.

SECTION LXX.

(G. § 89.)

The particles முன், முன்பு, முன்னர், முன்னம், before; பின், பின்யு, பின்னர், after, behind; கீழ், under, below; மேல், above.

- 1. All these particles are used with the dative or with the oblique case, in regard to place; thus:
- எனக்குமுன்பு (or, என்முன்பு) மடைகள்தோன்றின, mountains appeared before me.
- வீட்டுக்குப்பீன்பு (or, வீட்டின்பீன்பு) இரண்டுதெருக்களுண் டு, there are two streets behind the house.
- வானத்துக்குக்கீழே (or, வானத்தீன்கீழே) பூமீயுண்டு, beneath the sky is the earth.
- என்தலைக்குமேலே (or, தலையின்மேலே) கல்லையெறிந்தா ன், he threw stones over my head.
- 2. Cos is also used with the oblique case, in the sense of upon, concerning; thus:
- கடலின்மேல் நடந்தார், he walked on the sea.
- கர்த்தர்மேலேபாடி ஞன், he sang concerning the Lord. எங்கள்மேலிரங்கும், have mercy upon us.
- Note. தடுபின்மேல், which has been translated above as over the head, may therefore also mean upon the head. In the former instance, டேல் is a noun governing its preceding noun in the oblique case. In the latter, டேல் is one of the 28 poetical terminations used in forming the seventh case (see sec. XIII. 7.) தடுபின்டேல், when it means upon the head, is equal to தடுபின்டுக்கில்; தடிவின்டேல் to தடிவினிடத்தில்; ஏற்கன்

மேல் to எங்களிடத்தில்; கர்த்தர்மேல் to கர்த்தரிடத்தில், although கர்த்தரிடத்தில் is never used in the sense assigned to கர்த்தர்மேல் in the example above. Concerning the சாரியை, இன், see sec. xiii. note 1.

3. Così is also used, as a particle meaning upon, with the genitive case; as:

அவர்கமதமேல்வைத்தஇரக்கம்பெரிதாயிருக்தது, the compassion which he had toward us was great, (lit. which he put upon us, &c.)

Note. Nouns ending in a may have these particles annexed to their nominative cases; thus:

அவன்முன், before him. அவன்பின், behind him. அவன்பேற், beneath him. அவன்மேல், upon him.

4. Two of these particles only, viz., we and sei, are also used with the dative case in regard to time; as:

அதற்கமுன்னே, before that; previous to that. உனக்கப்பீன்பேறக்தேன், I was born after you.

Note 1. (1) is may be thus used with the verbal noun of any tense; thus:

நாவ்பேசு இறதற்கு முன்னே, before I speak.

நான்பேசினதற்கு முன்னே, before 1 spoke.

நான்பேசுவதற்குமுன்னே, before I shall speak.

But பின் only with the verbal noun of the past tense; thus: தான்போனதற்குப்பின்பு, after I had gone.

Note 2. Com may be used with the future, and com with the past relative participle; thus:

தான்சொல்லும்முன்னேபோனுன், he went before I spake.

தான்போனூன்புகூக்குரவிட்டான், he made a noise after I had gone.

The common people use also பிறகு and பிற்பாடு for பின்; it is not classical.

- 5. முன்னே, முன்பு, and பின்பு, are also used adverbially at the beginning of a sentence; thus:
- முன்னேயவன் நல்லவனு பிருந்தான் பின்பு கெட்டவணுன், formerly he was a good man; but afterwards he became bad.
- 6. முன், பீன், கீழ், and மேல், are also used adjectively, as:

முற்பக்கம், the front, or forepart.

பிற்பக்கம், the hinder part.

கீழ்ப்பக்கம், the lower part.

மேற்பக்கம், the upper part.

7. முன் and பின் are also used substantively, and may be declined, as:

முன்னுலேபோனுன், he went before.

பின்னுலேபோ, go behind.

8. பின்னும் and மேலும் are used as conjunctions, meaning, moreover, again, besides, thus:

பின்னும் (or, மேலும்) அவன்சொன்னதாவது, moreover he said thus:

அவணப்பின்னும்அடித்தான், he beat him still more.

9. மேல் is often used twice with உம், as மேலும்மேலு ம், or மேன்மேலும், which means more and more, increasingly. மேன்மேலும்ஏற்ளுர்கள், they ascended more and more, i. e. higher and higher.

SECTION LXXI.

(G. § 90.)

- மட்டு, வரை, பரியந்தம், and அளவு, all mean *limit,* measure: and from these are derived the particles மட்டும் or மட்டுக்கும், வரையில், or வரையிலும், or வரைக்கும், பரியந்தம், and அளவும், all meaning until, as far as. They are used with the nominative case.
- 1. மட்டும் or மட்டுக்கும் is used most frequently in regard to *place*, as:
- அவ்வூர்மட்டும்போவோம், we shall go as far as that village.
- 2. வரையில், or வரையிலும், or வரைக்கும், and பரியக் தம், refer either to *time* or to *place*, as:
- எதுவரைக்குமென்வனவருத்தப்படுத்துவீர்கள், how long will you trouble me?
- நாங்கள்சென்னபட்டணம்வரையிற்சென்றபொழு**து, when** we had come as far as Madras.
- மரணபரிய**ந்தம் உண்**மையுடையவனுயிருந்தான், **he was** faithful unto death.
- 3. All these particles are used also with the relative participles: most frequently with the *future* relative participles, thus:
- அவ்வூருக்குப்போகும்மட்டும் நீசாமான்களை வீட்டுப்போக வேண்டாம், thou must not leave the baggage until (lit. even (to) the limit in which) thou shalt reach that village.
- கர்த்தர்வருமளவும், until the Lord come.
- அந்த இராசாமரணமடையும்பரியந்தந் தகுமுஞ்செய்துகோ

ண்டுவந்தான், that king performed charity until his death.

They are sometimes used also with present and past relative participles, thus:

- நான்திரும்பிவருகிறவரைக்கும்என்வீட்டுக்காரியங்களைவிசா ரித்துக்கொள், take care of my household affairs until I return.
- என்றைந்கூடியமட்டுஞ்செய்வேன், I will do as much as I can.
- உங்களாலானமட்டுஞ்செய்யுங்கள், do as much as you can.

SECTION LXXII.

(G. § 91.)

- 1. ωρρ is an adjective, and is equivalent to the word other, when it is used in the sense of the rest, thus:
- மீன்களையுங் கீணைகளையும்மற்றப்பதார்த்தங்களையுங்கொ டுத்தார்கள், they gave fish, greens, and the other (i. e. the rest of the) things.

Note. 10 pass means, therefore the other one, and can be used only when two persons are alluded to. 12 pass of, if not restricted, means the rest of mankind; but if we use it in speaking of any class or body of men, it means, of course, the rest of that class or body.

- 2. மற்று and மற்றும் are used as adverbs, and mean besides, or other in an indefinite sense; thus:
- மற்றகேகளியங்களைப்பேசினர், he spoke many things besides; i. e. he spoke many other things.

- மற்றுந்து உணமானவார்க்கைகளையே முகியிருக்கிறன், he has likewise written other blasphemous words, i. e. not only these which I have mentioned, but others also.
- Note 1. Observe that in these instances other does not mean the rest. மற்றொலுன் therefore means another one, any other one, lit., one besides; it never means the other one; it is equal therefore to வேனொவன்.
- Note 2. The adjectives ωρρ and Ge p differ. ωρρ always means other, in the sense of the rest. Com means other indefinitely, but never in the sense of the rest. For example; if you wish to say, that out of ten persons, two went east, and the rest went south. ωρρ must be used to signify the rest. But if you say that two went east, others went north, others went west, and the remainder went south, while wip must be used in the final clause. Co p or Sor must be used in the two preceding clauses. Co a has two meanings. It also means other as to kind; i. e. different.

SECTION LXXIII.

(G. § 92 to § 103.)

- 1. இன் or இன்மேல், hereafter, refers always to the future time, thus:
- இன் (or, இன்மேல்) நான்இப்படிப்பேசமாட்டேன், I will not hereafter speak thus.
- 2. The commiserating particle geun is used as oh! alas! thus:

ஐயோஅக்யாயம்மிகுதி, alas! how much injustice!

Note. &Cun has been used, as a noun, with the dative case,

thus: e.or* & BCun, woe be to thee! This is incorrect; it can never be used as a noun. To express this idea, Cus and some other such word, must be used, thus:

ஐபோஉனக்குவேதனே (or, தண்டனே) வரும், lit. alas! distress (or, punishment) will come to thee.

3. &L, together, is often added to the social ablative, thus:

அவனேடேகூடப்போனேன், I went along with him.

- 4. தவிர and ஒழ்ய, except, are used with the nominative case, thus:
- இவ்விரண்டுசேலைகள்தவிர மற்றயாவையும் எடுத்துக்கொ ண்டுபோ, carry away all the cloths except (or, but) these two.
- சாத்தன் கொற்றனென்பவர்களொழிய மற்றயாவருங்கீழ்ப் பட்டிருக்கீருர்கள், all (the rest) have submitted except Sāttān and Köttān.

Note 1. The exceptives அல்லாமல், தவிர, and ஒழ்ய, are often used indiscriminately both in sentences that end with negative and those that end with affirmative finite verbs; but it is better to use அல்லாமல் as an exceptive, only in sentences closing with a negative verb; [see sec. lx. 3. (1.)] and தவிர and ஒழ்ய as exceptives, only in sentences ending with an affirmative verb.

Note 2. Two of these, viz. அவ்லாமல் and ஒழிய, are sometimes added to the second indefinite mood, to express unless; (they must then always be followed by a negative verb,) thus:

தீங்கள்ம அபடியும்பிறந்தாலல்லாமல், (or பிறந்தாலொழிய) மோட்சத்தையடையமாட் டீர்கள், unless ve be born again

ye shall not obtain heaven.

But this is not classical; it is far more elegant to use the

abbreviated form of the negative verbal participle, (see sec. xxvIII. 7. (2) note.) with விட்டால்; thus: நீங்கள்பிறவாவிட்டால் &c.; and this may be followed by either a negative or an affirmative verb.

- 5. ஏறக்குறைய, about, more or less, is placed before the number to which it refers, thus:
- ஏறக்குறையஏழுவருஷத்துக்குப்பின்பு, after about seven years.
- 6. Ap, off, from, without, is used with the nominative case, thus:
- அவணக்காதறவெட்டினன், he cut off his ear; lit. he cut him so that the ear fell off.
- என்சர்தேகமறப்பேசினர், lit. he spoke so that my doubt ceased.

Note. The ignorant use அற also in the sense of மிருதியாக; thus: அய்யா அறக்கொடுமைகெய்தான், Sir, he has dene much cruelty.

- 7. குழ, குழ்க்து, or குழ்க்துகொண்டு, and சுற்றி, meaning around, surrounding, require the accusative case, thus:
 - , எ<mark>ன்வ</mark>ைச்சூழவாருங்கள், எ<mark>ன்வ</mark>ைச்சூழ்ந்துவாருங்கள், *come around me!* எ**ன்வ**ைச்சுற்றிவாருங்கள்,
 - 8. கடுக and முடுக, quickly, hastily, and மெல்ல, slowly, are used adverbially, thus:

கடுகவந்தான், he came hastily. முடுகப்போஞன், he went quickly. மெல்லநடந்தான், he walked slowly.

9. வலிய, spontaneously, freely, precedes a verb, thus: வலியத்தந்தான், he gave of his own accord, spontaneously.

- Note 1. This வலிய, which is an infinitive, must be distinguished from the adjective வலிய, strong, which is joined to nouns and does not require the following க, ச, த, ப, to be doubled, thus: வலியசர்ப்பட், the strong serpent.
- Note 2. கூட, தவிர, ஒடிய, அர, குழ, க**ே**க, மூ**ேக**, மெல்ல, and **வவி**ய, are *infinitives* used as particles. ஏறக்குறைய consists of two infinitives. See sec. xi. 6. (1.)
- 10. தறித்து, concerning, about, requires the accusative case, thus:
- உன்வனக்குறித்துயோசவைபண்ணுவேன், I shall consider about you.
- Note. CuffCa is sometimes used instead of ⑤ ஹித்த; but it should never be so used, for it is not Tamil.
- 11. இல்லாவிட்டால், if not, unless, is always added to the nominative, or used absolutely with reference to the preceding verb, thus:
- பணமீல்லாவிட்டால்எப்படிப்பிழைப்போம், how shall we live unless we have money?
- கீயிதைச்செய் இல்லாவிட்டாலு**ன் வை** த்தண்டிப்பேன், do this; if not, I will punish you.
- Note. 🔊 એજા is the abbreviated form of the negative verbal participle. (See sec. xxviii. 7. (2.) note.)

SECTION LXXIV.

(G. § 103.)

1. ஆணும், or ஆகிலும், or ஆயினும், (meaning although it should become, or be,) and அப்படியிருந்தும், (mean-

ing although it is, or was,) are used, at the beginning of sentences, as the disjunctive conjunctions but, yet. They cannot, however, be indiscriminately used. Observe the following marked difference between them.

(1.) ஆனும், அக்லும், ஆயினும், are fourth indefinite moods; (see sec. XLVIII. 3;) they are, therefore, suppositious, and cannot be used in reference to any thing which actually exists, or has been already done; thus: பாவிகள்நாகத்துக்குப்போவார்கள், ஆக்லும்புத்தியடையமா ட்டார்கள், sinners will go to hell; yet they will not get good sense.

Here Curenissis as a wind is equal to Curent'; the sentence therefore means although sinners should go to hell, they will not get good sense.

Note. (30) 12. &c., when thus used, always require the following verb to be in the future tense, with a negative either expressed or understood.

- (2.) அப்படியிருந்தும் is a third indefinite mood; and is not suppositious, but certain; (see sec. XLVIII. 2. and 3;) it must be used, therefore, in reference to things which actually exist, or have been already done; thus:
- பாவிகள்ளரகத்திற்குப்போவார்களென்று கர்த்தர்சொன்னர் அப்படியிருந்தும் மனிதர்கள் மனந்திருப்புகிறதில்வை, the Lord has said that sinners shall go to hell; yet men do not repent.
- 2. Again அனும் or ஆக்லும், when affixed to nouns in succession, denote either, or; and, if the following verb be negative, neither, nor; thus:

இராசாவானுவம்பீச்சைக்காசனுனும் பராபரனிடத்தீல்ம

ணந்தீருப்பாவட்டால்மோட்ச இராச்சியத்தீற்பெயேசியார் கள், neither the king nor the beggar will enter the heavenly kingdom, unless they turn unto God.

Note. In this sense & Albania has been incorrectly used instead of the last & Albania.

3. ஆனுவம் or ஆகிலும், when affixed to only one noun, means at least, even; thus:

ஒருபணத்தையாகிலுங்கொடுக்கமாட்டீயா, will thou not give at least (or, even) a fanam?

Note. & A.L., & A.L. are also affixed to interrogatives. (See sec. lxv. 5.)

SECTION LXXV.

(G. § 104.)

The particle ஏனும், (the contracted form of என்-னும்,) is used like ஆகிலும் in the following instances.

- 1. When affixed to an interrogative, it changes the interrogative into the indefinite, (see sec. lxv. 5.); thus: சற்தணன்எவ்வளவேனும்புத்தியடையமாட்டான், Satkunnen will not get any sense.
- 2. When affixed to a single noun, it means at least, even, thus:
- பத்தப்பணமேனுங்கொடு, give at least ten fanams.
- 3. When Tout is added to two or more nouns, it means either, or; and, if the following verb be negative, neither, nor; thus:

போன்னேனும் வெள்ளியேனுஞ் செம்பேனுங்கோடு, give either gold, or silver, or copper.

SECTION LXXVI.

(G. § 105.)

1. மாத்திரம், அளவு, தவை, and தவை, all denote measure, and are used with the demonstrative and interrogative pronominal prefixes, thus:

அம்மாத்தீரம், அவ்வளவு, அத்தவை, அத்துவண, that much. இம்மாத்தீரம், இவ்வளவு, இத்தவை, இத்துவை, this much. எம்மாத்தீரம், எவ்வளவு, எத்தவை, எத்துவை, how much?

They may then be employed—

(1.) Substantively; thus:

இந்தகெல்லுஎம்மாத்தீரம், this paddy (is) how much? இப்பணம்எவ்வளவு, } இப்பணம்எத்தவை, } this money (is) how much?

பூமீயின் சுற்றளவு அம்மாத்திரமே, the circumference of the earth (is) thus much.

(2.) Adjectively; thus:

அம்மாத்தீரந்தானியத்தைக்கொடுத்தான், he gave so much grain.

எத்தணைநாட்பிரயாணம், how many days journey?

- 2. மாத்தீரம், without any prefixes, has two uses—
- (1.) It is used as a particle of restriction, meaning only, but; it may be affixed to nouns in any case, thus: நான்மாத்திரம்வந்தேன், I only came.

இதைமாத்தீரஞ்சொல்லு, say this only.

(2.) It is added, in the seventh case, to relative participles, and then means as soon as, at the instant; thus: மழை பெய்தமாத்தீரத்தீலே வீட்டுக்குள்ளே போய்விட்டே sir, I went into the house as soon as it rained.

Note. 520, with 210 affixed, is used with the future relative participle in the sense of until; (see sec. LXXI. 3.); thus: தான்வருத்தினயும்இவ்கேயிரு, stay here until I come.

SECTION LXXVII.

(G. § 106 to § 112.)

1. The nouns புறம், and பால், meaning a side, a part, are, with the demonstrative pronominal letters prefixed, used as adverbs; viz., அப்புறம், அப்பால், on that side, or, farther; இப்புறம், இப்பால், on this side, or, hither; thus:

> அப்புறத்சொல்லு, say on! or, say farther! இப்புறம்வா, come hither! அப்பாலேபோ, go farther! இப்பாலேவை, put (it) this way, or, this side.

These words may be united with nouns of place; they then require those nouns to be in the dative case; thus:

ஆற்றுக்கப்புறம் (or ஆற்றுக்கப்புறத்திலே) போனேம், we ment to the other side of the river.

சென்னபட்டணத்திற்கிப்பாலேவந்தோம், we came on this side Madras.

புறம் also means the outside. It is then the opposite Digitized by Google

of ent, or said, the inside; and is used to express with-out, abroad; thus:

உள்ளும்புறகும், } within and without.

புறத்திலேயிதைச்சொல்லாதிரு, do not tell this out of doors. வீட்டுக்குப்புறத்திலே (or வீட்டுக்குப்புறத்துப்) போ, go out of the house.

The common people however say வீட்டுக்கப்புறம்போ, go out of the house.

- 2. பொகுட்டு is used—
- (1.) With the future relative participle, to express purpose, design; and means in order to, for the purpose of. In this sense it can be used only of rational beings, thus: அவர்கமக்குந்தேசய்யும்பொருட்டுவந்தார், he came in order to render justice to us.
- (2.) With the nominative, or oblique case, of nouns; thus:

அவன்பொருட்டு, for his sake.

சரீரசவுக்கியத்தின்பொருட்டு அதைச்செய்தேன், I did it for the sake of bodily health.

அதீன்பொருட்டு, for that purpose.

Note. பொருட்டாக is also used for போருட்டு.

3. கிமீத்தம், or கிமீத்தமாக, for the sake of, on account of, is used with the nominative, or oblique case, of nouns; thus:

அவர்கிமித்தமாகப்பராபரன் அனுக்கிரகஞ்செய்வார், for his sake, God will be gractous.

நீசெய்தகுற்றத்தினிமீத்தந்தண்டிக்கப்படுவாய், on account of the sin which you did, you shall be punished. 4. ஆகையால், ஆதலால், ஆனபடியின்லே, are used as causal conjunctions, wherefore, therefore, at the beginning of a clause or sentence; thus:

கர்த்தர் கிருபைசெய்வார், ஆதலாற் சக்தோஷமுள்ளவனுயி கு, the Lord will be gracious; therefore be glad.

Or, inasmuch as these words must always be preceded by a sentence, or clause, which states some reason, or cause, they may often be regarded as concluding a clause which states a reason for the thing that is expressed in the following clause of the same sentence; they must then be rendered because, since; thus:

மழைபெய்யும் ஆகையால் கீபோகக்கூடாது, thou must not go because it will rain.

5. The indeclinable particles snow, and snub, (with or without or affixed,) may, for the sake of emphasis, be added to nouns in any case. snow is used with singular, and snub with plural nouns. They mean self, very, indeed; thus:

அவன்தான்வந்தான், he himself came.

அந்தப்பையைத்தானேகொண்டுவா, bring that very bug.

கருத்தர்தாமேயுங்களைத்தண்டிப்பார், the Lord himself will punish you.

Note. மெய்தான், true indeed, or அதமெய்தான், that (is) true indeed, is, in Tamil, always placed at the end of the sentence of which it is an affirmation, and not at the beginning or in the middle, as in English. மெய்தான் must follow a verbal noun; but அதமெய்தான் may follow any finite verb; thus:

அவர்பெரியவராபிருந்ததுமெய்தான், or) truty he was a அவர்பெரியவராபிருந்தார்அதுமெய்தான்,) great man.

- 6. The particle தோறும் (in poetry, தொறும்) means every; it is used—
- (1.) With nouns in the nominative case. It indicates that such nouns are plural, although they may be singular in form. The context must determine the case in which those nouns are to be understood; thus:

நாடோறும் (நாள்தோறும்) or தீனக்தோறும், every day. மாசக்தோறும், every month.

வருஷக்தோறும், every year.

நான் வகுக்றேனென்று வீடுதோறும் (or வீடுகள்தோறும்) போய்ச்சொல்லு, go to every house and say that I am coming.

Here வீடுதோ அம் is equal to எல்லாவீடுகளுக்கும்.

Note 1. Car ph must not be confounded with silver, for, although these words may be in some cases equivalent to each other, in others, they widely differ; thus:

விகள்தோ அம்ஆண்பிள்ள களுண்டு, and | mean there ere spaid and children in every house.

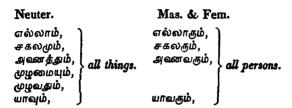
But ஒவ்வொருபுத்தகங்கோடும், means give one book of every kind that you possess.

Whereas yie icoks of every kind that you have; and does not specify any number.

- Note 2. Observe that Car win is not extensively employed; it occurs only in certain connexions.
- (2.) With the future relative participle; thus: அவர்சொல்லுக்தோறங்கேளு, whenever he speaks, hear.

SECTION LXXVIII.

(G. § 112.)



These nouns mean all in regard to number. When they are united with other nouns, எல்லாம் and எல்லா கும் may be either prefixed or affixed; சகலமும் and சக லகும் are never affixed, but சகல is prefixed to nouns of any gender, and requires such nouns to end with உம். All the rest are invariably affixed; thus:

thus:

தேவன்மீருகங்கள ஊத்தையுமுண்டாக்கீனூர், God created all the beasts.

வேலைக்காளக்கொல்லாரையுங்கூப்படு, call all the servants.

While these several words mean all in regard to number, only two of them, viz., மழமையும் and முழவ-

sub can also be used to denote the whole of a thing; that thing must then be in the singular number; thus:

இருதயம்முழுவதும், the whole heart.

Note 1. முதுமையும் and முழுவதும் can, in this latter sense, be united only with such neuter nouns as denote inanimate creatures. When affixed to neuter nouns denoting animate creatures, they mean all, in respect to number only; thus, அறுமுமுமைத் புஞ்சாப்பட்டான், does not mean he ate a whole sheep, but he ate all the sheep (of a flock.) To express the former idea, we must say ஓராட்டி மைச்சிமுமுமைத் புஞ்சா ப்பிட்டான், he ate the entire flesh of a sheep.

Note 2. Some have written முழுத்துயமும், and எல்லா இருதயமும், to express the whole heart; but this is incorrect.

ARRANGEMENT OF CERTAIN CLAUSES.

(G. § 113 to § 116; and § 117 to § 119.)

1. The clause which expresses the design or end of a determination, assertion, or command, always precedes the clause which contains that determination, assertion, or command; thus:

கீங்கள் பராபானுடைய பீள்ளைகளாயிருக்கும்படிக்கு உங்க ள்பகைஞரிடத்தீல் அன்புடையவர்களாயிருப்பீர்களாக, love your enemies, in order that you may be the children of God.

2. In all sentences in which a prior clause thus states the object or design of the subsequent clause, if the first clause be in the negative, the following clause

must be in the affirmative form; and vice versa; if the latter clause be in the negative, the former must be in the affirmative form; thus:

- கண்ணுக்குச்சேதம் வாராதபடிக்கு இவ்விடத்திலே கில்லு, remain in this place, lest your eye be injured.
- கண்ணுக்குச்சேதம்வரும்படிக்கு இவ்விடத்தைவிட்டுப்போ காதிரு, do not leave this place, lest your eye be injured.
- 3. The clause which expresses the cause or reason, precedes the clause which contains the effect or inference; thus:
- காற்றும்கவும் அடித்தபடியினுலே காக்குரிதமாக கடக்கலில் வல, we did not proceed quickly, because the wind blew hard.
- பசாபசன் மீகுந்தக்குபையுடையவராகையால் அவரிடத்தீல் நம்பிக்கையுள்ளவர்களாயிருங்கள், trust ye in God; for he is very gracious.
- பரமண்டலத்திலே யுங்களுக்கு மீகுந்தபலன் வருவதாற்சந் தோஷமுள்ளவர்களாயிருக்கக்கடவீர்கள், rejoice; for your reward will be great in heaven.

In sentences where the clause that contains the causes or reasons is very long, the order above prescribed may be inverted, and the interrogating phrases exhibited in Sec. Liv. 3, may be used. But to make such a change in short sentences, like the foregoing, and say நார் தரிதமாக நடக்கவில்ல என்னத்தின் மண்குந்தன் மண்குற்கள் கண்குத்தின் மன்னத்தின் தம்பிக் கையுன்னவர்களாபிருக்கள் என்னத்தின்மெனில் அவர்பிருந்த கெருமையுடையவராபிருக்கிறர், would be very awkward and feeble.

4. When something is said of a subject both negatively and affirmatively, the negative always precedes the

affirming clause, by which the use of a disjunctive coniunction becomes unnecessary; thus:

இந்தப்பையல் சாக்கிரதையள்ளவு அயிராமற் சோம்ப அயிக க்கீருன், this boy is not diligent, but lazy.

சூரியன்பிரகாசங்கோடாமல்மறைக்கிருக்கூன், the sum did not shine, but was hid.

In a few cases this order need not be observed: but then the negative must not be the opposite of the affirmative clause, and the affirmative clause must close with an auxiliary verb; thus:

தயவுள்ள சிருல். டி. சரை நீங்கள் விசுவாகித் துக்கொண்டு அவரு டையகற்பணக்கத்தள்ளாதிருப்பீர்களாக, believe in your beneficent Creator, and do not reject his commandments.

5. In comparisons the thing compared must be immediately preceded by that with which it is compared; thus:

புலியைப்போலப்பூணபாய்க்தது, the cat rushed forth like a tiger.

என்னிலும் மகணையும் மகளையும் அதிகமாகச்சிரேகிக்கிறவ ன்எனக்கப்பாத்தீரனல்ல, he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

Here because மக்கேயும் and மக்கையும் are immediately preceded by sim of such, the comparison lies between them and என்னிலும்; all three of them being objects of the verbal ACதேதிக்கிறவன். But if you write மகணேயும்மகளையும்என்னி அமை இகமாகச் சிதே இக்கிறவன், &c., the comparison will lie hetween அதேகமாகச்சிநேகிக்கிறவன் and என்னிலும், and the meaning will be he who loves son or daughter more than I do, &c.

But in cases where the thing compared has a long

attributive clause, the thing with which it is compared may be placed between it and that attributive clause provided no ambiguity arises from it; thus:

உம்முடையத்ருவசனம்பொன்னிலும் அத்கவிமையேறப்பே ந்றதாயிருக்கீன்றது, thy word is more precious than gold.

Note. There are six modes of expressing the comparative degree; thus:

பார்க்கி அம் and காட்டி அம் are fourth indefinite moods; See sec. xxvi. 2.(2.) and (4). பார்க்க and வீட are infinitives.

6. Parenthetic clauses, so frequently used in European languages, cannot be admitted into a Tamil sentence. If such clauses are to be translated into Tamil, separate sentences must be made of them, unless they can be otherwise conveniently united with the principal sentence; thus:

Know then this truth, (enough for man to know,) virtue alone is happiness below, இவ்வுலகத்தீலேசன்மார்க்கத்தி குலேமாத்தீரம் பாக்கியமுண்டாகுமென்பது மெய்தான்; அதையறிந்துகோள். இதுமனிதர்அறிவுக்குஅமைந்தது.

Seven or eight (Sozomus makes it ten) months Julian staid at Constantinople, இயூலியானென்னுமீராயன்கொன் ஸ்தக்தீன்புரியீலேஏழெட்டுமாதமிருக்தான். பத்துமாதமிருக் தானேன்றுசொசோமுவேன்பவன்சொல்லியிருக்கீருன்.

ARRANGEMENT OF WORDS.

(G. § 119.)

Words that belong to the nominative should not be mixed up with words that belong to the finite verb. Words depending on the nominative should precede the nominative, and words depending on the finite verb should precede the finite verb; thus:

அத்கத்ரவியங்களைச்சேர்க்கிறவன் தண்குடும்பத்தை வருத்த ப்படுத்துக்ளுன், he who guthereth great riches troubleth his household. It would be very obscure to say தன்கு மேட்பத் தை அதிக திரவியங்களோச்சேர்க்கிறவன் வருத்தப்படுத்துகி ருன்.

Dependent words must be placed nearer to, or farther from their principal, according to their relative importance; thus:

ஆண்டவரே கீர் இரசரிகத்தை இஸ்ரவேலருக்கு இக்காலத் தீலோத்கும்பக்கொடுப்பீரென்றுகேட்டார்கள், they asked, "Lord, wilt thou AT THIS TIME restore the kingdom (or, government) to Israel?"; since this question refers especially to the time, இக்காலத்திலோ is properly placed immediately before the finite verb. If இஸ்சவேலருக்கு be put in its place, the meaning will be wilt thou give it at this time to ISRAEL, or to some other nation? Again, if இரசுக்கத் தை be put immediately before the verb, the meaning will be wilt thou give at this time the KINGDOM, or something sist?

Thus also in the following sentences, (which contain a nominative, finite verb, and a dependent phrase,) the nominative, or the dependent phrase, is made more or

Digitized by GOOGLC

less prominent by its position in reference to the finite verb;

சென்னபட்டணத்தீலே சங்கரலிங்கமேன்பவனிருந்தான், means SANGARALINGAM was in Madras; the man, and not the city, is here the important word. But சங்கரவிங்க மென்பவன்சென்னபட்டணத்திலேயிருந்தான், means Sangaralingam was in Madras; here our minds are chiefly directed, not to the man, but to the place where he was.

அவருடையவாயிலிருந்துகபடமானவார்த்தையொன்றும்புற ப்படவில்லை, NO DECEIT WHATEVER proceeded out of his mouth.

If you should say படமானவார்த்தையொன் அமைருடை யவாயிவிருத்துபுறப்படவில்ல, it would mean that no deceil whatever proceeded out of HIS MOUTH.

APPENDIX.

SECTION I.

Divisions of Time.

(G. page 273.)

1. THE DAY.—The day, as distinguished from the night, is called பகல், and the night இரா.

A day consisting of 24 hours is called brown, when it is considered as a part of the month; it is called sup sow, when it is considered as a part of the week: the day or date of the month is called Goung or Cos, and is marked a.; a lunar day, i. e. the day according to the age of the moon, is called &&.

The day is divided into 60 parts, called any sons, (vulg. காழ); each காழகை contains 24 minutes; 60 நாழ்கை are therefore equal to our 24 hours; each நா ழீகை is divided into 360 parts, called கொடி or கீமீஷம்.

The night (viz., from sunset to sunrise) is divided into four parts, called சாமம் or யாமம். Therefore முதலான் சாமம் is from six o'clock in the evening till nine o'clock; இரண்டாத் சாமம் is from nine to twelve; midnight is called நடுச்சாமம்; முன்றுத்சாமம் is from twelve to three o'clock; and நாலாத்சாமம் is from three to six o'clock in the morning.

2. The Week.—The week is called £ 4000 or an σω. It consists, like ours, of seven days. These seven days receive their names from the planets, called &osib;

in which the Natives include the sun and moon. The term & wow is added to the names of these planets; thus:

ஞாயீறு, the Sun, தீங்கள், the Moon, சேவ்வாய், Mars, புதன், Mercury, வியாழம், Jupiter, வெள்ளி, Venus, சன், Saturn, ஞாயிற்றுக்கிழமை, Sunday. தீங்கட்கிழமை, Monday. செவ்வாய்க்கிழமை, Tuesday. புதன்கிழமை, Wednesday. வியாழக்கிழமை, Thursday. வெள்ளிக்கிழமை, Friday. சனிக்கிழமை, Saturday.

3. Months.—The month is called when or when, and is marked B. The first month of the year is #\$ \$605, and corresponds to nearly half of our April and May.

சித்திரை, corresponds to nearly half of April and May. வைகாசீ. do. do. May and June. gof. do. do. June and July. July and August. **3410**. do. do. August and September. ചലത്ത്. do. de. புஏட்டாசி, do. September and October. do. do. October and November. ஐப்பசி, (vulg. அற்புசி,) November and December. கார்த்திகை, do. do. December and January. மார்கமீ. do. do. January and February. do. do. തെക്ക February and March. மாசி, do. do. March and April. பங்குனி, do. do.

4. THE YEAR.—The year is called வருஷம் or ஆண்டு, and is marked . But when the age of a person is meant, வருஷம் is not used, but வயத, or வயசு, or பிராயம்; which words literally signify age. For instance,

I am ten years ald must be rendered by எனக்கப்பத்தவ யதுண்டு, or பத்தப்போயமுண்டு, and not by பத்தவகுஷ முண்டு. But, I was born ten years ago must be expressed by வருஷம், thus, நான்பிறக்குபத்தவருஷமாயிற்று.

SECTION II.

Peints of the Compass.

(G. page 278.)

A region, or point in the horizon, is called for or fise.

The four chief points are:

கிழக்கு or கீழ்த்திசை, the East.

தேற்கு or தென்றிசை, the South.

மேற்கு or மேற்றிசை, the West.

வடக்கு or வடத்கை, the North.

The four intervening angles are called coas; they are:

தென்கீழக்கு,	between	East and South.
தென்மேற்கு,	do.	South and West.
வடமேற்கு,	do.	West and North.
வடக்ழக்கு,	do.	North and East.

In each of these eight points, the Hindoos imagine a god to reside. These gods they call fixulunwan, the keepers, or guardians, of the points.

They are these:

Bis such, the chief of the gods, in the East.

அக்கீன், the god of fire, in the South East. இயமன், the god of death, in the South.

க்குத், a king whom they esteem the most potent and liberal, in the South West.

வருணன், the god of the waters, in the West. வாயு, the god of the winds, in the North West. குபேரன், the god of riches, in the North. சுசானன், Siven himself, in the North East.

The terms, above mentioned, are also used as adjectives, thus:

கிழக்குத்தேசம், the eastern country, ar region.
கீழ்கடல், the eastern sea.
தென்றேசம், the southern country.
தென்கடல், the south sea.
மேற்குத்தேசம், the western country.
மேல்கடல், the western sea..
வடதேசம், the north country.
வடகடல், the north sea.
கீழ்ப்பக்கம், the east side.
தென்பக்கம், the south side.
மேல்பக்கம், the west side.*
வடபக்கம், the north side.

SECTION III.

Terms of Relationship.

(G. page 279.)

The Tamulians express the word relation, by முறை or உறவு; for instance, உனக்கும்அவனுக்கும்முறையே ன்ன, what relation are you and he (to each other)? Particulars are these:

^{*}If we write Guoussis, it will mean the upper side.

*The father is called, † c தகப்பன், c அப்பன், தக்தை, or பீதா.

The elder brother of the father, cபெரியத்கப்பன், cபெரியப்பன், &c.

The younger brother of the father, cசிறியதகப்பன் சேற்றப்பன், &c.

‡The mother, cதாய், cஆத்தாள், cஅம்மாள், ஆய்ச்சி, அம்மை, ஆய்.

The mother's elder sister, c பெரியதாய், c பெரியாத்தான், c பெரியம்மான், &cc.

The mother's younger sister, c சிறியதாய், c சிற்குத்தாள் c சின்னம்மாள், &c.

The grandfather, both on the father's and mother's side, பாட்டன்.

The grandmother, both on the father's and mother's side, $c \cup \pi \perp \varphi$.

§The father's sister, c y 5005.

^{*}These words, meaning father, are also sometimes used to designate the father's brothers; but not frequently, lest he who so uses them should give others occasion to say that his mother has more than one husband.

[†]The letter c is prefixed to those terms which are in most common use in Madras.

[‡]These words, meaning mother, are also freely used to designate the mother's sisters and the wives of a father's brothers. But they generally prefix the distinguishing adjective பெரிய, or தெற்ய; thus, பெரியதாய், கெறியதாய், &c.

Suppose is also sometimes used to designate the mother of one's wife, or the mother of one's husband; but world is the common term to express this relation of mother-in-law.

*The brother of the mother, cமாமன், c அம்மான், c தா ப்மாமன், c நல்லம்மான்.

Brothers and sisters, கூடப்பிறக்கவர்கள், சசகோதமர் கள், உடன்பிறக்கவர்கள்.

The elder brother, or the elder son among the sons of the father's brothers, or among the sons of the mother's sisters, e sisters, e

The younger brother, or the younger son among the sons of the father's brothers, or among the sons of the mother's sisters, $c \in \mathcal{B} \cup \mathcal{S}$.

The elder sister, or the elder daughter among the daughters of the father's brothers, or among the daughters of the mother's sisters, c sisters, c sisters, c sisters.

The younger sister, or the younger daughter among the daughters of the father's brothers, or among the daughters of the mother's sisters, csississ.

† A man, cபுகுஷன், cமனிதன்.

A woman, c in fit.

துண்மக்கள், sons. பெண்மக்கள், daughters. ஆண்குதிரை, ^a horse. பெண்குதிரை, a mere.

^{*}LOTICE also means the father of one's wife, or the father of one's husband, and a father's sister's husband, as well as a mother's brother.

ர்மளிதர்கள் means human beings. The nouns ஆண், a male and பெண், a female, are prefixed to other nouns both of the உயர்தினை and அல்லினே class; thus:

The husband, cபுருஷன், நாயகன், கணவன், மணவா என், கொழுநன், பர்த்தா or பத்தா, அகமுடையான், (vulg. c அகம்புடையான்.)

*The wife, c பெண்சாதி, c பெண்டாட்டி, மணவி,நாயகி, தாரம்.

Any one of the wife's brothers, may be called south from the wife's younger brother, or the husband's younger brother, or the husband of a man's sister.

It also means a cousin who is the mother's brother's son, or the father's sister's son.

It also means a man's younger brother's wife; also a cousin, who is the mother's brother's daughter, or the father's sister's daughter.

The wife's elder sister, c முத்தமாமீயார், c கொழுக்தி.

†The husband's younger brother, c கொழந்தன்.

The husband's sister, whether elder or younger, c நாத்தனர்.

Persons who have married two sisters call each other

^{*}புருஷின், a man, is commonly used to denote husband; and பெண்சாதி, which means female kind, is used to denote wife.

⁺The kusband's younger brother is also commonly called மச்சுகள், மச்சான். See above.

சேகலன். Persons who have married two brothers are called, cஒய்ப்பிடியார், c ஓரகத்திமார்.

Several women, married to one man, call each other c சக்களத்தி, சக்களத்தி.

A mother's brother, also a father-in-law, also a father's sister's husband, c ωπωσά.

A mother's brother's wife, also a mother-in-law, c ωπιδ.

A son-in-law, c மருமகன்.

It also means the son of a man's sister, or the son of a woman's brother.

A daughter-in-law, மேருமகள்.

It also means the daughter of a man's sister, or the daughter of a woman's brother.

A grandson, c பேரன், c பேரப்பிள்ளை,

A granddaughter, cபேர்த்தி.

The Tamulians often add ஆர், as an honorific, to these several terms; thus: தகப்பஞர், தாயார், மாமஞர், மாமீயார், தமையஞர், தமக்கையார், டீட மார், or மார்கள், is added to them to form their plurals; thus: தகப்பண் மார்கள், தாய்மார்கள், மாமன்மார்கள், மாமீமார்கள், போ மார்கள், பேர்த்தீமார்கள், டூட

SECTION IV.

Hindoo Cycle, and Ages.

(G. page 274.)

The Hindoos have a kind of cycle, consisting of 60 years; to each of these years, they give a separate name. Subjoined is a list of them, with the year according to our reckoning.

1	ീ പ്രം	வருஷம்,	1807—8.
2	ഖിവഖ,	(Fig.)	18089.
3	சுக்கில்,	,,	1809—10.
4	பீர்மோதூத,	,,	1810—11.
5	பேசோற்பத்தி	, ,,	1811—1 2.
6	ஆங்கீரச,	"	1812-13.
7	சீமுக,	"	1813-14.
8	ഥഖ,	"	1814—15.
9	പ്പം	"	1815—16.
10	தாது,	3 9	1816—17.
11	ஈச்சுமு,	"	1817—18 பவர.
12	வேகுதானிய,	,,	1818—19.
13	ப்ரமா த்,	,,	1819—20 பீர.
14	விக்கிரம,	,,	1820-21.
15	ഖ്കു,	,,	1821-22.
16	சித்தீரபானு,	"	1822—23.
17	சுபர்னு,	"	1828—24.
18	தாரண,	,,	1824 —25.
19	பார்த்தீப,	"	1825-26.
20	விய,	23	1826-27. 9[e
			Digitization by COCIE

21	சருவசித்து,	வகுஷம்	1827—28.
22	சருவதாரி,	@	1828—29.
23	வீரோதீ,	,,	1829—30.
24	விக்குத்,	,,	183031.
25	Б Г.	"	1831—32.
	ந ந்தன ,	• ,,	1832—33.
	விசய,	"	1833—34.
	æΨ,		1834—35.
	மன்மத,	"	1835—36.
	துன்முக்,	"	1836—37.
	துவமுக, ஏவீளம்பி,	"	1837—38.
	-	11,	1838—39.
	விளம்பி,	"	
	விகாரி,	"	183940.
	சார்வரி,	"	1840-41.
35	பிலவ,	"	184142.
	சுபக் <i>ருது</i> ,	,,	1842—43.
37	சோபக்குது,	"	1843 44 .
38	குரோதி,	,,	184445.
39	ഖ്കഖനഖക,	,,	1845-46.
40	പണവേഖ,	,,	1846-47.
41	பீலவங்க,	,,	1847-48.
42	ക് കെട്ട,	33	1848-49.
43	சௌமீய,	"	1849—50.
44	சாதாரண,	,,	185051.
	வீரோதிக்குது,	"	185152.
	பரிதாபி,	"	1852—53.
	பீரமாதீச,	"	1853—54.
	அகக்க,	"	1854—55.
49	•	,,	185556.
50	கள ்,	"	185657-
	•	"	Digitized by GOOGLE

51	பிங்கள,	வகுஷம்	185758.
52	காலயுத்தி,		1858—59.
53	சீத்தார்த்தீ,	,,	185960.
54	சௌத்தீர்,	"	186061.
55	துன்மத்,	,,	186162.
56	தாந்தாமீ,	,,	1862—63.
57	ருத்ரோத்காரி,	,,	1863—64.
5 8	ரத்தாட்சி,	,,	1864—65.
59	தரோதன,	,,	1865—66.
60	அட்சய,	"	186667.

They use these names chiefly in legal transactions; but in family concerns, which are for perpetuity, as well as in the inscriptions of temples, they join to the name of the year, the year of the æra of Sālivāhana and that of the 4th age. About the Hindoo ages I shall give an account presently.

As for the epoch of Sālivāhana (சாலிவாகனம்,) it is the most memorable among the Hindoos, from which they reckon their years. This epoch dates from the death of Sālivāhana, king of Visnagar, which happened in the 3179th year of the 4th age, and corresponds with the 78th year of the Christain æra; சாலிவாகனம் means the vehicle of the cross, or crossbearer. Who can help thinking that this alludes to our Lord Jesus Christ? Many circumstances coincide to make us believe that the whole account of சாலிவாகனம் is a perversion of the history of Christ. See more on this subject in the Asiatic Researches.

Moreover the Hindoos make the duration of the

world to be four ages, called use, each of which consists of a large number of years.

The first waid is called &Cosmusib, i. e., the age of innocence; the golden age of the Greeks. It consisted of 1,728,000 years; in it the bull of justice stood on four legs. The second waid is called &Cosmusib, or the silver age; consisting of 1,296,000 years. It was inferior to the former; and the bull stood on three legs. The third waid is called sommonwaid, or the brazen age; consisting of 864,000 years. It was still worse, and the bull had only two legs. The fourth waid is called somewhaid, i. e., the age of strife and misery; the iron age; consisting of 432,000 years. This is the age in which we now live; and the bull is left standing on only one leg; which allegery aptly represents the tottering state of virtue, and the prevalence of sin.

In the Kanda Puranum, we are informed of the manner in which these ages have been calculated. It is thus:

The time that is necessary for the middle finger resting on the thumb, to be taken off quickly, is one instant, equal to the twinkling of an eye; this time is called workfood or seimonfood.

```
2 மாத்திரை, make 1 சிப்புரம். -
10 சிப்புரம், ,, 1 கணம்.
12 கணம், ,, 1 விருடி.
60 விருடி, ,, 1 காழ்கை.
7 நாழ்கை, ,, 1 சாமம், or the 8th part of a day.
8 சாமம், ,, 1 நான், or day.
```

15 நாள்.

1 பட்சம், or half a month.

2 பட்சம். make 1 மாதம், or a month. 12 மாதம், , 1 வருஷம், or a year.

100 வருஷம் is the common term of the life of man.

These 100 years multiplied by 360 (because each year contains so many days) make 36,000. This number multiplied by six on account of the six subdivisions unfifond, diagno, diagno, diagno, makes 216,000, which is the hasis of the calculations, respecting the durations of the four ages. The calculation then proceeds thus:

216,000 multiplied by two, in honor of the quality of virtue, and of vice, gives the number of 432,000, which expresses the duration of the adulad, or fourth age in which we now live.

216,000 multiplied by four, in honor of the four vedams, makes 864,000, which is the number of years of the summands to the summands of the summands.

216,000 multiplied by six, in honor of the six Shastrams, makes 1,296,000, which is the number of the years of the βGσρημεώ, or second age; and lastly,

216,000 multiplied by eight, in honor of the eight points of the compass, produces 1,728,000, being the number of years of the £Gognusů, or first age.

The united years of these four ages make the number of 4,320,000, called #துரயுகம், i. e., the four ages of the world.

2000 சதாயுகம், (i. e. 8,640,000,000,) make one day and one night of Brahma, or 24 of his hours; 60,000 சதாயுகம், are one of his months; 12 such months constitute one of his years; and 100 such years are the term of his life.

The duration of the life of Brahma makes only one day of Vishnoo's existence; 30 of such days form one of his months; and 12 such months constitute one of his years; after 100 such years he will die, and then Siven alone will exist.

This calculation is certainly ingenious; but at once points out what we have to think of the boasted antiquity of the Hindoos. It does not rest on any history whatever, and is a mere invention of the brain.

The Bramins prepare annually an almanac, which is called use subset, a Sanscrit word composed of uses, five, and subset, a member. It is so called because it contains five points of information, viz. 1. It shows the se, the day according to the age of the moon. 2. aloub, the day of the week. 3. bisselve, the constellation in which the moon enters every day. 4. Cause, the good and bad days. 5. asserb, divination, augury.



3 2044 038 361 127



